HISTORY OF THE PACE FAMILY

from
Manuscripts of

MISS ANNIE JONES (1873-1951)
BARNABAS PACE (1789- )
MAUD McCLURE KELLY (1887-1973)

Compiled By:
Freda Reid Turner
CONTENTS

PACE .......................... 1
The Pace Family of Virginia .......................... 9
George & Sarah (Maycock) Pace .......................... 40
Isabella Pace & William Perry .......................... 55
Generation III and IV .......................... 57
Summary, Pace Line in Charles City .......................... 66
The Broadnax Family .......................... 69
Richard Pace & Rebecca Poythress .......................... 101
Richard Pace and Elizabeth Cain .......................... 114
Charles Pace of South Carolina & GA .......................... 120
Alfred G. Pace Family .......................... 127
Richmond County, Georgia .......................... 146
The Newsome (Nusom) Family .......................... 155
The Sign of the Crest .......................... 157
Barnabas Pace Letter .......................... 162
Notes of Maud McLure Kelly .......................... 193
Richard Pace .......................... 205
Kathy Best Pace Letter .......................... 214
Samuel Macock, First Generation .......................... 217
Second Generation .......................... 219
Third Generation .......................... 220
Fourth Generation .......................... 223
Fifth Generation .......................... 227
Sixth Generation .......................... 230
Seventh Generation .......................... 231
Eighth Generation .......................... 233
Ninth Generation .......................... 236
Samuel Macock .......................... 238
OTHER PUBLICATIONS AVAILABLE
THROUGH
THE PACE SOCIETY

THE PACE FAMILY, 1607-1750
PACE, One of America's Earliest Emigrant Families
PACE, A Family History and Lineage
CHANCO, The Indian Hero of Colonial Jamestown
Coloring Book
According to the 1880 Georgia Census, DeKalb County, Annie Jones was born in 1873, the daughter of Henry C. Jones, an Attorney, age 34 and Mary M. Ramspect Jones, age 23. Annie had listed in that census two younger sisters, Flora H. age 5, and Mary E. age 3.

Henry C. Jones was born in Griffin, Georgia, admitted to the Atlanta Bar and moved to DeKalb County. He was considered to be one of the most gifted and brilliant lawyers and orators of his day. He represented DeKalb County in the Legislature.

His father was Dr. J. W. Jones who represented Monroe County in the State Legislature and was elected to Congress from the Third Congressional District in 1846. He was also a professor at the Medical College of Atlanta.
At the DeKalb County Historical Society in Decatur, Georgia, there is an obituary taken from the DeKalb New Era newspaper, dated August 16, 1951, badly mutilated in spots but enough information to let us know just who Miss Annie Jones was:

MISS ANNIE JONES
PIONEER DECATURITE
PASSES THURSDAY

The passing of Miss Annie Bell Jones at a local hospital Thursday, August 9, brought sadness to a host of friends and former pupils who admired her keen intellect, vicariousness and wit.

She was a descendant of old Virginia families, her mother being Charlotte Lewis Ramspect and her father Col. Hal C. Jones, who was a member of a pioneer Georgia family and Judge of the first City Court in DeKalb County.

Miss Jones was born at No. 3 E. Court Square 78 years ago in the beautiful old home with wide verandas and large columns in front, next to the store of George Ramspect, her uncle, where the First National Bank now stands.

She first attended the old Academy in Decatur, taught by Mrs. Stark and her daughter, Miss Nora Bell, fondly remembered by old residents. A teacher for 25 years she taught in Atlanta, in Decatur, Kirkwood, Lithonia and Blakely schools. Later she worked in the insurance office of the old Jones and Ramspect firm in Decatur. When the firm dissolved, having a mind that would not be idle, she became a professional genealogist.

Her knowledge of early history and old families caused people from far and near to write to her, and come to see her, regarding data on these subjects.

She was a member of the DeKalb County Genealogical Society and Scrap Book Chairman for the DeKalb
County scrap book which she compiled is a fitting memorial to her, which will be of untold value to future historians and posterity. The DeKalb County Genealogical Society and 26 members of the DeKalb Historical Society formed an escort of honor at her funeral which was held at 4 o'clock, August 11, at First Methodist Church, Decatur.

Dr. Walter S. Robinson, Assistant Pastor of that Church and Dr. Hugh Bradley of the Decatur Presbyterian Church, to which she belonged, officiated.

Survivors are two sisters, Mrs. J. A. McCrary and Miss Bessie Jones, a brother, George Ramspect Jones, a niece Miss Ellen Bennett and two nephews, Hal C. and John Alford Jones, all of Decatur.

Pallbearers were Carl Ramspect, Alva McCrary, Hugh ______, Anthony Green, Robert _____, James Kirk and Burt Filber. Honorary pallbearers were ____ George, Leon O'Neal and ___. Internment was in Decatur Cemetery.
HISTORY OF THE PACE FAMILY

Every effort has been made to record information in this publication as accurately as possible. With careless handwriting at times, blotches, torn pages and faded handwriting was at times difficult to read. As a result, errors will occur especially in spelling of names in spite of all best efforts. If an error was made in any manner, please forgive me and accept my apology.

Freda was born in Troup County, Georgia in 1923, the daughter of Herman Chester Reid and Margarette Hurst Reid who was the grand daughter of Lucretia Jane Pace of Newton County, Georgia, daughter of William Pace who can be traced all the way back to Richard and Isabella.

Freda first married John Frank Shropshire in 1942 and from that union two sons were born, Edward C. and Sevis Lynn. Second married Memory George Turner and presently lives in McDonough, Georgia. Since retirement she has been busily engaged in abstracting information for Genealogical research in Henry, Campbell and Greene Counties of Georgia for the Henry County Genealogical Society. Since 1990, the Society has published 12 books, of which Freda completed six, plus two for the Pace Society and contributed to the production of six for the Genealogical Society.

Freda joined the Pace Society in 1989 and has been an active member since that time. In transcribing the Pace Family History from manuscripts of Miss Annie Jones, Maud McLure Kelly and Barnabas Pace, perhaps you will be able to find your missing link. Without Uncle Barney's letter, I would be unable to trace my line and would not have been able to become a recent member of the Jamestowne Society.

--Freda Reid Turner
Maud McLure Kelly (1887-1923) lawyer, historian and genealogist was the first woman to pass the Alabama Bar in 1908, and was one of the first women to work within the Democratic Party organization. As a feminist, Maud knew in her heart that women were not child-bearing vehicles alone, but that they were equal to men and capable of any job that a man could do and compete in a man's world by moving ahead and becoming lawyers, doctors, ministers and politicians. With this idea in mind, Maud dedicated herself to community service and enjoyed a successful law practice in Birmingham, Alabama until her retirement in 1931. She then moved to Montgomery and for several years worked as Historical Materials Collector for the Alabama Archives. She was a professional genealogical researcher and spent 40 years researching her family which included the PACE family.

In 1969 Maud placed her papers in the Samford University Library Special Collections Department, approximately one ton of books, genealogical records, family histories, maps, newspapers and periodicals that she had preserved through the years. She placed no restrictions on her papers, freely allowing reproduction, but asked that the collection not bear her name, but to memorialize her mother and father. Therefore, her lifetime of work became known as the Bledsoe-Kelly Collection, which represents the heart and soul of Maud McLure Kelly.
HASTING TOWN
In the
Seventeenth Century
PACE

Family Name: PACE, PACY, PASE, PAYCE, PAICE


"British Family Names by Rev. Henry Barber, M.D.F.S.A., London, 1903, page 209. PACE -- "It is a British family name and it came from the Normans. The Normans gained a foothold in England in the 9th Century.

ORIGIN OF THE FAMILY

Ref: Falaise Roll of the companions of William the Conquerer," page 71.

LE SIRE DePACY

From Pacy --sur-eure arrondissement of Everent (?) Pacy, which anciently belonged to the Freduke (?) King and the carlovingins, came unto possession of Duke Rollo who annexed it to the ducal domain. Richard I, Duke of Normandy granted it to Herfast the brother of his wife who was the father of Osberne de Drepore and grandfather of William Fitz Osberne.

A strong castle existed there from a very early date which as time wore on came into increasing prominence, and as early as 1222 King Phillip of France sojourned there.

William Crispen I was the possessor of a large amount of property in Pacy which is made evident by his many donations to the Abbey of Bec, before 1070. When he was appointed by Duke William about 1045, the castle of Pacy came under his command, it being one of the border fortresses in this district. The signiory of Pacy was in the possession of
William Fitz Osberne at the time of the Conquest, consequently there could not have been another Sire de Pacy there, as affirmed by Wace (1-B. 655) unless he meant to chronicle William de Bretenil, eldest son.

If this assumption is incorrect then, he referred to some one who held under Fitz Osborne, though probably not entitled to be designated "Sire de Pacy."

There was at one time a Wm. de Pacy (Willelume de Paceio) apparently of considerable importance who with his mother, Hadwis, gave land to the Abbey of Bec, about 1700.

He would appear to be the same William de Pacy possibly Castellan of Pacy, who was among the witnesses of a charter in favor of St. Evroult Syraonit de Toent between 1087 and 1099.

A Pacy about 1153, son of made a donation to the Abbey of St. Tauren, with the consent of his William Bretenil. Ref: Dict. de l' Eure II, 622.

Wm. Crispin I gave the Abbey of Bec, before 1070, one sixth of the mills at Pacy, one half of the forest there belonging to it, and 100 solidi of the customs of the citadel (Serain partens moleudininorum Paceii accuidium silvai ibidem ad se perlineutis, C. solides dePaceio). Bibli. not lat. 13905 fr et lat 12884 fr 85).

If Le Prevost was correct in placing this charter in 1135, then this William de Bretenil was the son of Euslache de Betenil known as William De Pacy, seigneur de Pacy, and de Breteinl, who died in 1152. (Le Provost Mem, II, 513).

The earliest recorded member of the Pace family, in English records was Thomas Pace of Yorkshire, who was of age in 1429. Ref: "In Wills, York Register," Vol 2, Folio 560, Yorkshire, England. "Wills in York Register, 1389-1514," Vol. 1, Folio 76. Thomas Pace, York Ad., Aug. 25, 1429. Pace migration, Yorkshire to Norwickshire, to London, to Virginia. The "Visitations of Warwickshire" indicate that this Pace family must have been from that vicinity, p. 242.

Evidence points to the family at York, 1427; in Stratford-on-Avon (Sholtery), 1562. Walter Reinolds, Jocosa filia Rice (Richard) de olde Stretford, Pace de Sholtery 3 files.

It is probable that this family was from Stratford-on-Avon. Ref: page 150, Marriages of London, 1562, January 31, Stratford-upon-Avon, Thomas Rogers and Margaret Pace.
There are only two Pace references in the Index of English Records. The Leicestershire History contains five volumes, but the one Pace lineage was the only Pace date except a single reference. Not the nearness of Sholtery and Stratford-on-Avon, where the Paces came from to London, from whence they came to Virginia.

The most distinguished member of the Pace family was Dr. Richard Pace of England (1482-1536), a man of great learning, of the Household of King Henry VIII and Katherine of Arragon, the Ambassador of Henry to the Imperial Court of Maximilian, one of Cardinal Baynebridge's Secretaries, and afterwards Secretary of State, known to have been in London in 1516. He took orders in the Church, which in that day meant that he was a regular Priest. Henry VIII was the King who took the Church of England out of the Church of Rome, and he did not do so until after Richard Pace had taken Orders. Ref: "Dictionary of National Biography" (British) Vol 17, page 22. Of course, he left no descendents, but his relationship to any family would be a source of pride. He was one of the greatest scholars of his day. According to the "Dictionary of National Biography" this Richard Pace had a brother, John, who was a customer of Lynn, Norfolk, in 1522, later in London.

It has been accepted that John Pace, brother to Richard Pace, prebendary and dean who never married but was a Priest, and was the ancestor of Richard Pace of "Paces Paines" immigrant to Virginia.

A reference to "Visitations of Warwickshire," page 243, proves that a family of Paces of whom the head of the family was one Richard Pace, lived in the neighborhood of Stratford and Sholtery. It seems that Richard Pace of Sholtery had a daughter to marry Walter Reynolds of Olde Stratford, all in the Shakespear country.

It is most interesting to recall that Pace and Fisher and Moore and Erasmus were very closely associated in the Council of King Henry VIII, in London, and in Virginia we find their descendents associated and nearby neighbors, even intermarrying.

Descendents of these in the early annals of Virginia history are closely associated and living in the same counties. Thomas Pace witnessed Martin Fisher's will: John Moore married Tabitha Pace; Erasmus Taylor married Jane Moore; Richard Taylor and Richard Pace and Samuel Maycock were very closely associated.

Thus, we have Richard Pace in England (1482-1534) known to
have been in London in 1514, of the Household of King Henry VIII and Katherine of Aragon, one of Cardinal Baynebridge's secretaries and afterward Secretary of State surrounded by Fisher, Edwards, Lee, Gardner, Tunstall, Moore and Erasmus. The immigrant, Richard Pace, of Virginia undoubtedly came before 1616; he probably married in England. Both he and Isabella, his wife, paid their passage over. He was a Protestant or he would not have been allowed to settle in Virginia.

Coat Armor. Ref: "Burke's General Armory" page 769.

COAT OF ARMS OF PACE

Arms, or on a cross quarterly, as and gu a bird betw a lion pass in chief, two squirrels, sejant in fess, and in amulet in base, all of the first. Crest; a boar's head couped and erect, so, eared or charged with an anchor of the last. Motto; there is no motto. (This is a very old coat-of-arms, older than mottoes).

Only as a fitting symbol of what is past can heraldry now be considered; as such it should be cherished as a connecting link and its established rules be respected. The true method to be followed consists in proving descent from ancestor of the same name who bore a coat-of-arms. The use of coat armor was originally to distinguish the head of a sect or class, or some division in battle, for when on the helmet was seen the crest or on the shield the arms of the family, then could be distinguished the particular family, clan, or individual. Also, the arms on a seal affixed to a legal document was in lieu of writing the name, authoritative as one's signature to a deed, etc.

Later on, coats-of-arms were granted to one who signalized himself in battle, or in some way served the King, or brought honor to himself and family in the realm of war; medicine; literature, judicial attainments, etc., etc. And thus the individual receiving them was marked apart from the commodity and set apart as it were, as one of the gentry of the realm in contradistinction to the mass of people of the Kingdom.

A peer-or titled man- is one made by a King; a gentleman made himself or became such by descent from a feudel baron (the noble class) or chief of a clan whose family was considered noble. So, then, the aristocracy of a country was the titled families, the landed gentry, every whit equal to the titled families. For these either descended from noble houses, feudal barons, chiefs of clans, or landed men (lairds) who held their courts and elected out of their numbers representatives to parliament who sat with the Lords of Parliament
of new creation.

In England, all families bearing arms were considered noble, though in England this was not necessarily so, but the bearer of arms was always a Gentleman, and the nobleman always bore a title (though oftentimes not so truly noble as the Gentleman, for many gentlemen sprang from illustrious houses, were chiefs of clans, and before the advent of "peers of parliament" were among the feudal barons, or nobility of the Kingdom, in Scotland, until King James III introduced the peers of parliament in the country.

A baronet was a privileged character who in time of danger was next to the Sovereign to defend him; and though he had no hereditary seat in parliament was classed among the peers and the titled as hereditary.

The eldest son had on attaining to age the right of being a knight before his father died. Title by inheritance vests in all descendents of the ancestor, no matter what their social status or condition may be. It is now a long established custom, or practice, of widely spread usage to bear arms which are known in the Herald's College. Sir Bernard Burke, Ulster King of Arms, issued his "General Armory" and has preserved the blazonry of thousands of shields not officially recorded, a work of great value. Ordinary armorials are not "honors" but merely the insignia by which families may be symbolically or pictorially distinguished from other families.

Heraldic insignias descend to all the sons of the possessor and gentility does not depend upon the possessions of a coat-of-arms.

There is nobody competent to pronounce with authority upon questions of right in armorial bearings. In old times the right of heralds to grant arms was questioned. In their visitations very few descendents are carried beyond the next generation from the grantee. Their records carry the merest fraction of the number in justice entitled to be the bearers of ancient arms.

There is no pretense to control the display of family arms in private houses, in churches, on seals, or on tombstones. In Germany it is lawful for every citizen to assume a coat-of-arms, but it is forbidden to assume one already in use by another family. But this requirement is not even in force in England. A man may take the arms of the family from which he is descended or he may devise a new coat for himself, and upon payment of a yearly fee of two guineas to the Inland
Revenue may bear these arm upon his carriage, his plate, his book plate, and his signet ring.

The law makes no distinction between arms of assumption and the grants of the College Armorial devices used for a certain period however acquired in the first instance, are two bona fide property of the bearer, and nine tenths of the armigoes of England can show no better title.

Regarding arms in America it is clear that in Colonial days as in the present every one has been strictly within his lawful right who has displayed them. The Pace coat armor is of interest as one of those which bears the stamp of time. It shows no supporters or motto; those were not adopted before 1300.

Arms were not seen quartered in England until the time of King Edward I, a husband would wear his wife's arms in a small square placed in the center of his shield.

It has been generally agreed by English and American writers that in America the use of arms by a family previous to the Revolution may be taken as evidence that the family had a right to use thereof. R. A. Brook says that in the use of coat-armour, there is more evidence of gentle lineage in Virginia than in any other American colony.

Ref: "Meade's Old Churches" pages 112 & 189. Coats-of-arms were in the Middle Ages the distinctive signs of the "Gentleman" in English society. The rigid etiquette observed in the County records of Virginia for the Seventeenth Century shows that these distinctions prevailed here, as well. None to my knowledge, at this early period assumed the name of "gentleman" without a claim to arms, and the bearer jo arms was a gentleman according to the original definition of Sir Edward Coke. In the next century, a latitude was prevalent in the use of both the dignity of "gentleman" and the sign which distinguished him. The Herald's Visitations continued in England until 1682.

Colonists were proverbially more conservative than the people in the mother country and whilst the term "Gentleman" assumed a very genteel and very general meaning in the succeeding century its signification, at this time, was perhaps what Sir Edward Coke ascribed to it "qui gerit arms", one who bears arms. Whenever possible they had their Coat-of-Arms emblazoned, framed, and hung on the paneled over mantel.

The Richard Pace family of James City, Virginia, was entitled
to bear arms. Richard Pace and John Pace of North Carolina, who emigrated to that State from Virginia, bore the arms of the Pace Family of England. The seal was attached to the wills of both Richard and John.

I have a photostat copy of the Coat-of-Arms borne by a Richard Pace of England (1486-1536), Secretary of State under Cardinal Baynebridge, in the time of King Henry VIII. HE, HOWEVER, HAD NO ISSUE. I have a photostat copy of the will of Richard Pace, of North Carolina (who died in Bertie County in 1738), showing the impression of his seal.

I have a copy of the will of John Pace (who died in Bertie Precinct Chowan County, Bertie County not then having been formed), in 1727. The seal was originally attached to his will but in transferring records from Bertie Courthouse to Raleigh, the seal was detached and has become lost. There are evidences, however, to show that John Pace, also, signed his will with a seal bearing the Pace arms.

Arms: Or, on a cross quarterly azure and bules, a bird betw. a lion passant in chief, two squirrels sojant in fess and an armlet in base, all of the first.

Mr. Homer W. Pace, of Charleston, S. C., states: "An aunt who passed away many years ago, informed me about the time that the Jamestown Exposition was held that they were descendents of Richard Pace of Jamestown. If she left any records or papers, I have never been able to find them. My father told me that our family line could be traced back to the earliest days of the Virginia Colony. I am familiar with some records of Richard Pace of Jamestown, in 1622-1626 also of Richard Pace and John Pace, Senior, of Bertie Precinct, in North Carolina. My family connections have lived in Wake County since before 1790. Richard died in 1738 and John in 1727."

"I have copies of their wills. I have been told that Richard and John were descendents of Richard Pace of Pace's Paines, of James Cittie County, or some other eastern Virginia County, most probably Charles City County. There is no doubt in my mind that the Pace family of Wake County can trace a relationship with Richard Pace of Jamestown. I was told years ago that the names Richard, Thomas and George should be perpetuated by succeeding generations, because they were family names and could be traced back to the times the Pace's emigrated to Virginia. I have not been able to learn what year Richard Pace arrived in America, or the name of the boat on which they came. It is thought that he came
with Gates & Somers in 1611, when Captain Perry (Pace's friend) came to Virginia."

"Because he paid his own passage over, there is no mention of Pace in the Lists of the First, Second or Third Supplies sent out by the London Company. Hotlon does not mention him until after the Massacre of 1622."

"Yet, Richard Pace received land as his Dividend being an 'Ancient Planter' in 1620. The 'List of Ancient Planters' includes those who are known to have come to Virginia before the close of the year 1616; survived the Massacre, appear in the Muster of 1624/5 as then living in Virginia and to most of whom the term with justification be applied."

Both Richard Pace and his wife, Isabella, received land as "Ancient Planters" when the "first dividends" were parceled out, December 5, 1620.

Isabella Pace and her husband, Richard Pace, received land, 100 acres apiece--each "due for the personal adventure," so it is safe to assume that she also paid her passage over. It is probable that they were married in England.

This is the Richard Pace to whom honor is paid as the Savior of Jamestown in the Massacre.

Two descendents of Richard Pace have joined "The Georgia Society of Colonial Dames of the Seventeenth Century" in the Year Book 1939, states: Mrs. R. E. Bell, Atlanta, GA, was Accepted: National Number 451 and State Number 32, and Mrs. Hugh H. Trotti, Decatur, Georgia, Accepted, National Number 799 and State Number 101.
Tragedy was the predominant note of the settlement. For a long time the Colony had been at peace with the Indians. Powatan, the father of Pocahontas, died and was succeeded by his brother, Opechankano, a treacherous son of the priest who looked with a jealous eye upon the ever growing settlement. At once he began plotting destruction.

The red man came and went at will among their "white brothers" and with great cunning and skill Opechankano concealed his scheme, openly professing warm friendship for the English.

In March 1622, he had completed his plan and was ready to strike terror. The Indian pretending friendship came with "fruits, fish, turkeys and venison" to sell. Suddenly unspeakable horror!

With lightening swiftness disaster fell upon the settlement. Within one hour the first war whoop startled the settlers, 300 men, women, and children were massacred. Death in its most violent and horrible form raged for more than a hundred miles along both sides of the river James.

Jamestown was saved from burning and slaughter by the warnings of a christian Indian, but it was impossible to notify the more remote plantations. Three hundred and forty-seven colonists were killed. Every man who knew how to use a gun was pressed into service and the Indians were hunted down with merciless vigor, slaughtered outright and left driven into the depths of the forest, relentlessly pursued. Opechankano himself narrowly escaped with his life.

Ref: "Estates in Surry County, Virginia." Among the settlers at "Pace's Paine" (as the place was called) at the time of the Massacre of 1622, were Richard Pace, Isabella, his wife, Francis Chapman and William Perry. They had among their servants two Indian brothers who had embraced the Christian religion, one in the employ of Mr. Pace and the other in the employ of Mr. Perry. On the night of March 21, 1622, appointed by Opechankano for the general slaughter of the whites, the two Indians discussed the plan of murdering their masters.
in conjunction with the massacreing party which was to arrive the following morning.

As soon, however, as his brother was asleep, the Indian in the employ of Mr. Pace, named Chanco, arose and repairing to his master, informed him of the entire murdering plan. Mr. Pace was not slow in heeding the warning and at once placed "Pace's Paines" in a state of defense, hastily rowed across the river down to Jamestown and warned William Powell, Capt. of the Fort who sent off boats in all directions to the settlements within striking distance of Jamestown.

In the morning four boats full of Indians came in sight, but as soon as the muskets opened upon them they retreated in a cowardly manner. By means, thereof, of the noble act of Chanco and the measures of Richard Pace and Capt. Powell, the design of Opechankano for the entire existence of the English was frustrated.

The novel, "To Have and To Hold" by Mary Johnston, contains one of the more graphic and interesting accounts of the Massacre that has been written referring to a conversation between Capt. Ralph Percy and Master Pory, she quotes:

There's no attack as yet? No. They must know that we are prepared. But they have kindled fires along the river bank and we can hear them yelling. Whether they be mad enough to come against us remains to be seen. The nearest settlements have been warned?

Ay, the Governor offered a thousand pounds of tobacco and the perpetual esteem of the Company to the man or men who would carry the news. Six volunteered and went off in boats, three up river, three down. How many they reached or if they still have their scalps, we know not. And while ago, just before daybreak comes with frantic haste Richard Pace who had rowed up from Pace's Paines to tell the news which you had already brought. Chanco, the christian, had betrayed the plot to him and he managed to give warming at Powell's and one or two other places as he came up the river.

I do not believe that the Indians will take the palisade. It may be that, knowing we are prepared they will not attack at all.

Describing the Massacre, itself, Mary Johnston says:
The air was full of sound, shouts, savage cries, the beating of drum, the noise of musketry. The Indians are beginning to attack in force. There is smoke over the plantations up and down the river, as far as we can see and awhile ago the body of a child drifted down to us.

The noise increasing as he spoke, we hurried to the palisade. It was no time now to sulk behind a palisade. Through a loophole in the gate of the palisade, I looked and saw the sandy neck joining the town to the main and the deep and dark woods beyond the fairy mantle giving invisibility to a host.

A quick murmur like the drawing of a breath came from our line. The Governor, standing near me, cast an anxious glance along the stretch of wooden stakes that were neither high nor so thick as they should have been.

An arrow whistled by his ear; a second struck him on the shoulder, but pierced not his coat of mail. The volley that we fired full into the ranks of our foe was deadly, and we looked to see them turn and flee as they had fled before. But this time they were led by one who had been trained in English, steadfastness (Nautaugua). Broken for the moment, they rallied and came on, yelling, bearing logs, thick branches of trees, oars tied together, anything by whose help they could hope to surmount the palisade. We fired again, but they had planted their ladders. A moment and a score of them had leaped down upon us.

At all hazards that tide from the forest must be stunned. Those that were amongst us we might kill, but more were swarming after them and from the neck came the exultant yelling of madly hurrying reinforcements. We flung open the gate. I drove my sword through the heart of an Indian who would have opposed me and calling for men to follow me, sprang forward. Perhaps thirty men came at my call, together we made for the skewing.

A party of the savages in our midst interposed, we set upon them with sword and musket butt, and though they fought like very devils, drove them before us through the gateway. Behind us were wild clamor, the shrieking of women, the stern
spouts of English, the whooping of the savages; before us a rush that must be met and turned. It was done. A moment's fierce fighting, then the Indians wavered, broke and fled.

Like sheep we drove them before us, across the neck, to the edge of the forest, into which they plunged. Into that ambush, we cared not to follow, but fled back to the palisade and the town believing and with reason, that the lesson had been taught.

The strip of sand was strewn with the dead and dying, but they belonged not to us. Our dead numbered but three and we bore their bodies with us. Within the palisade we found the English in sufficiently good care.

Of the score or more Indians cut off by us from their mates and penned within that death trap half at least, were already dead, run through with swords and pile, shot down with the muskets that there was now time to load. The remainder hemmed about, pressed against the wall, were fast meeting a like fate. They stood no chance against us, we cared not to make prisoners of them, it was a slaughter, but they had taken the initiative.

The din had ceased and we, the living, the victors, stood and looked at the vanquished dead at our feet, and at the dead beyond the gates, and the neck upon which was no living foe, and at the blue sky bending over all. Our hearts told us, truly, that the lesson had been taught, that no more forever, need we at Jamestown bear an Indian attack.

And then we looked at him whose life we had spared the leader, Nautauquas, many of us could remember him a proud, shy lad coming for the first time from the forest with his sister to see the English village and its wonders. We had set him in our midst that summer day, long ago, on the green by the fort, and had called him "your royal highness" laughing at the quickness of our wit, and admiring the spirit and bearing of the lad and the promise he gave of a splendid manhood.

And all knew the tale I had brought the night before, how Nautauquas had warned Capt. Percy, a
captive of the plan of Chief Opechaucanough. He had said, "Tomorrow's sun and the next, and the next three suns and the tribes will fall upon the English. At the same hour, when the men are in the fields and the women and children are in the houses they will strike--Kecoughtans, Paspahegls, Chechahomines, Pammenby, Arrowhatocks, Ochesapeckes, Mausemonds, Accomack--as one man will they strike, and from where the Powatan falls over the rocks to the water beyond Accomack, there will not be one white man alive."

I had asked duly, "All die?" There are three thousand Englishmen in Virginia. He had answered, "They are scattered and unarmed. The fighting men of the village of the Powatan and the Pamunkey and the Great Bay are many and they have sharpened their hatchets and filled their quivers with arrows. Scattered, I said, strewn, broadcast up and down the river, here a lonely house, there a cluster of two or three, they at Jamestown and Henricus off guard--the men in the fields or at the wharves, the women and the children busy within doors, all unarmed, O my God!"

He turned his eyes upon me, Nautauquas is the war chief of his tribe, Opechancanhough is his king. "Nautauquas," I said, "Come against us, if you will," Nobley warned, "Fall upon our guard, we will meet you as knightly foe should be met."

At last there was left but the leader unharmed, unwounded, someone shouted to the musketeers to spare him. Slowly as one man, and with no spoken word, we fell back, the half circle straightening into a line and leaving a clear pathway to the open gate.

The wind had ceased to blow, a sunny stillness lay upon the sand, and the rough hewn wooden stakes, and a little patch of tender grass across which was stretched a dead man's arms. The church bells began to ring. The Indian, out of whose path to life and freedom we had stepped, glanced from the line of lowered steel to the open gates and the forest beyond, and understood. For a full minute he waited still and stately as some noble masterpiece in bronze. Then he stepped from the shadow of the wall and moved past us. His eyes were fixed upon the forest; there was no change in
the superb color of his face. He went by the huddled dead and the long line of the living that spoke no words, and out of the gates and across the neck, walking slowly that we might yet shoot him down if we saw fit to repent ourselves, and proudly like a King's sow.

There was no sound save the church bells ringing for our deliverance. He reached the shadow of the trees; a moment, and the forest had back her own.

We sheathed our swords and listened to the Governor's few earnest words of thankfulness and of recognition of this or that man's service, and then we set to work to clear the ground of the dead, to place sentinels to bring the town into order to determine what policy we should pursue to search for ways by which we might reach and aid those who might be yeat alive on the plantations above and below us. We could not go through the forest where every tree might hide a foe, but there was the river. For the most part, the houses of the English had been built like mine at Weyanoke, very near to the water. I volunteered to lead a party up river; and Wynne to go with another toward the bay.

But as the Council at the Governor's was breaking up and as Wynne and I were hurrying off to make our choice of the craft at the landing, there came a great noise from the watchers upon the bank, and a cry that boats were coming down the stream.

It was so, and there were in them white men nearly all of whom had their wounds to show, and cowering women and children. One boat from the plantation at Paspahigh, and two from Martin Prandon, they held all that were left of the people. There began that strange procession that lasted throughout the afternoon and night and into the next day, when a sloop came down from Heuricus with the news that the English were in force there to stand their ground, although their loss had been heavy.

Hour after hour they came as fast as sail and oar could bring them, the panic-stricken folks whose homes were burned, whose kindred were slain, who had themselves escaped as by a miracle. Many were sorely wounded so that they died when we lifted
them from the boats, others had slighter hurts. Each boat load had the same tale to tell of treachery, surprise, and fiendish butchery. Wherever it had been possible the English had made a desperate defense, in the face of which the savages gave way and finally retired to the forest.

Contrary to their wonts, the Indian took few prisoners, but for the most part slew outright those whom they seized, wrecking their spits upon the senseless corpses. A man too good for the world, George Thorpe, who would think no evil, was killed and his body mutilated by those whom he had taught and loved. And Nathaniel Powell was dead, and four others of the Council besides many more of name and note.

From the stronger hundreds came tidings of the numbers lost and that the survivors would hold the homes that were left, for the time being, at least. The Indians had withdrawn, it remained to be seen if they were satisfied with the havoc they had wrought.

Before the dawning we had heard from all save the remotest settlements. There were many women slain and little children. The blow had been struck and the hurt was deep. But it was not beyond remedy.

It is known what measures we took for our protection and how soon the wound to the Colony was healed and what vengeance we meted out to those who had set upon us in the dark. These things belong to history. In the chill and darkness of the hour before dawn, something like quiet fell upon the distracted breathless town. There was a pause in the coming of the boats. All was well at the palisade, the strong party encamped upon the neck reported the forest beyond them as still as death.

The following lists were taken from the original records and published in "Original Narratives of Early American History," Narratives of Early Virginia, 1606-1625 by Tyler are authentic, reproduced under the auspices of the American Historical Association. Edited by Lyon G. Tyler, President of the College of William and Mary, page 368.
Evidently there were thirty-one plantations. The whole number of those that were killed was three hundred and forty-seven (347). The numbers that were slain on those plantations in the Massacre:

1. At Captain Berkeley's plantation himself and 21 others seated at the Falling Creek, 66 miles from James City.

2. Master Thomas Sheffield's plantation some three miles from the Falling Creek, himself, and 12 others.

3. At Henrico Island, about two miles from Sheffield's plantation, 6.

4. Slaine of the College people, twenty miles from Henrico, 17.

5. At Charles City, died of Captaine Smith's mew, 5.

6. At the next adjoining plantation, 8.

7. At William Farrar's house, 10.

8. At Brickley Hundred (Berkeley Hundred) fifty miles from Charles City, Master Thorp and 10.

9. At Westover, a mile from Berkeley, 2.

10. At Master John West's plantation, 2.

11. At Captain Nathaniel West's plantation, 2.

12. At Lieutenant Gibs, his plantation and 12.


14. At Master Owen Macar's house, himself and 3.

15. At Martins Hundred, seven miles from James City, 73.

16. At another place, 7.

17. At Edward Boniets (Bennett's) plantation, 50.

18. At Master Waters' house, 4.
19. At Apamatuck's River at Master Perce, his plantation five miles from the College, 4.

20. At Master Maycock's divident, Captaine Samuel Macock and 4.

21. At Flower de Hundred, Sir George Yearley's plantation, 6.

22. On the other side opposite of it, 7.

23. At Master Swinhow's House, himself and 7.


25. At Weanock of Sir George Yearley's people, 21.

26. At Powel Brooke, Captaine Nathaniel Powell and 12.

27. At Southampton Hundred, 5.

28. At Martin Brandon Hundred, 7.

29. At Captaine Henry Spilman's house, 2.

30. At Ensign Spruce's house, 5.

31. At Master Thomas Perse, his house by Mulberry Ile, himself and 4.

Page 3691: It was 20 or 30 days ere they could resolve what to doe, but at last it was concluded all the petty plantations should be abandoned, and drawne only to make good five or six places where all their labours now for the most part must rebound to the Lords of those lands where they were resident.

Now for want of boats, it was impossible upon such sudden uprising to bring also their cattle and many other things, which with much time, charges and labour, they had there in possession, with them; all which for the most part on their departure were burnt, ruined, and destroyed by the savages.

Ref: The Records of the Virginia Company, Vol. 3, page 555:

That the slaughter had been universal if God had not put it into the heart of an Indian belonging to one Perry to disclose it who living in the house of one Pace was urged by another Indian,
his brother (who came the night before and lay with him) to kill Pace so commanded by their King he declared as he would kill Perry; telling further that by such an hour in the morning, a number would come from divers places to finish the execution, who failed not at the time. Perrie's Indian rose out of his bed and revealed it to Pace that used him as a sonne, and thus the rest of the colony had warning given them; by this means were saved.

Such was (God be thanked for it) the good fruit of an infidel converted to christianity, for thought three hundred and more of ours died by many of these Pagan infidels--Pace upon discovery, this discovery, securing his house, before day rowed over the river to James City (in that place more than three miles in breadth) and gave notice thereof to the Governor.

A very interesting account of the Massacre is this taken from Julian Hawthorne's "History of the United States" Vol. 1, of the "Nations of the World Series," pages 135, 136, 137:

The chief shadow upon the Colony was cast by its relations with the Indians. Powatan, the father of Pocahontas and chief over the tribe whose domaine extended over thousands of square miles, kept friendship with the whites till his death in 1618. His brother, Opechankano, professed to inherit the friendship along with the chieftainship, but the relation between the red man and the colonists had never been too cordial, and the latter measuring their muskets and breastplates against the stone arrows and deer skin shirts of the savages fell into the error of despising them.

The Indians for their part, stood in some awe of fire arms which they had never held in their own hands and the penalty for which selling to them had been made capital years before. But they had their own methods of dealing with foes, and since neither side had ever formerly come to blows they had received no object lesson to warn them to keep hands off. Opechancanough was intelligent and far seeing, he perceived that the whites were increasing in members that if they were not cheerful times, they would finally over rule the country. But, he did not see so far as his brother had, who had known that the final domination of the English could not be prevented and had therefore adopted
the policy of conciliating them as the best. Opechancanough, therefore, quickly planned the extermination of the settlers, the familiar terms on which the white and red man stood played into his hands. Indians were in the habit of visiting the white settlements, and mingling with the people.

Orders for concerted action were strictly circulated among the savages who were to hold themselves ready for the signal. It might, after all, never have been given but for an unlooked for incident. A noisy and troublesome Indian who imagines that bullets could not kill him, fell into a quarrel with a settler and slew him; and was himself shot while attempting to escape from arrest. "Sooner shall the heavens fall," devoutly exclaimed Opechankano when informed of this mishap, "Than I will break the peace of Powatan." But the waiting tribe of Indians knew that the time had come.

On the morning of March 22, 1622, the settlers arose as usual to the labors of the day, some of them took their hoes and spades and went out into the fields, others busied themselves about their houses. Numbers of Indians were about but this excited no remark or suspicion, they were not formidable, a dog could frighten them away, a child could hold them in check. Indians strolled into the cabins and sat at the breakfast tables. No one gave them a second thought, no one looked over his shoulder when an Indian passed behind him.

But, miles up the country from Jamestown lived a settler who kept an Indian boy whom he instructed and who made himself useful about the place, and of all the Indians in Virginia that day, he was the only one whose heart relented. His brother had lain with him the night before and had given him the word; he was to kill the settler and his family next morning. The boy seemed to assent and the other went on his way. The boy lay till dawn, his savage mind divided between fear of the great chief and compassion for the white man who had been kind to him and taught him.

In the early morning he arose and stood beside his benefactor's bed. The man slept, one blow and he would be dead, but the boy did not strike.
He wakened him and told him of the horror that was about to fall.

Pace—such was the settler’s name—did not wait for confirmation of the tale, indeed, as he ran to the paddock to get his pack horse he could see the smoke of burning cabins rising in the still air and could hear, far off, the yells of the savages as they plied their work. He sprang on the horse’s back with his musket across the withers and set off at gallops toward Jamestown. Most of colonists lived in that neighborhood. If he could get there in time many lives might be saved. As he rode he directed his course to the cabins on the right hand and on the left that lay in his way.

Many of the savages who had not yet began their work took to flight at once, they would not face white men when on their guard.

In other places the warning came too late, the missionary who had devoted his life to teaching the heathen that men should love one another was inhumanly butchered.

Pace arrived in season to avert the danger from the bulk of the little population; but of the four thousand scattered over the countryside, three hundred and forty-seven died that morning with the circumstances of hideous atrocity which were the invariable accompaniments of Indian massacres.

The colonists were appalled and for a time it seemed as if the purpose of Opechankano would be realized. Two thousand settlers came in from the outlying districts, panic stricken, and after living for a while crowded together in unwholesome quarters in the vicinity of Jamestown, took ships and returned to England.

Hardly one in ten of the plantations was not deserted. The bolder spirits who remained, organized a war of extermination in which they were supported and reinforced by the Company, who sent over men and weapons as soon as the news was known in England.

But the campaign resolved itself into long and harassing attacks, ambuscades, and reprisals,
extending over many years. There could be no pitched battles with Indians; they gave way, but only to circumvent and surprise. The whites were resolved to make no peace, and to give no quarter to man, woman or child. The formerly peaceful settlement became inured to blood and cruelty. But the red man could not be wholly driven away.

Ref: "Virginia, The Old Dominion," by Matthew Page Anderson, page 105:

But an Indian youth, Chanco, and Richard Pace provided the bright light of the tragic scene. In return for his education, Chanco was indentured to Capt. William Perry, but he was living at Pace's Paines with Richard Pace who it appeared had used him as a son.

Chanco had been urged to join in the Massacre. Abhorrence of the deed he was called upon to do, namely, the murder of his "white father" at the appointed hour, must have given him a sleepless night until he arose and revealed the plot, that information saved Jamestown neighborhood from the destruction that visited many others.

After making his house secure, Pace became the preserver of Dawes Revere, Jonett and others who set out to carry news of importance that meant the difference between life and death. The Governor was warned and couriers were promptly sent on their way to such places as could be reached in time. There is therefore, no record of deaths within a radius of some five miles of Jamestown while at "Martin's Hundred, some seventy odd were killed."

Ref: "Virginia Under the Stuarts," by Thomas J. Wertenbaker, published in 1914, page 48:

In speaking of the plans originated by Chief Opechancanough to annihilate the Colony at Jamestown, he said, "His plans were laid with great cunning."

Although thousands of natives knew of the design, no warning reached the white man until the very eve of the Massacre. While Opechancanough was preparing his tremendous blow, he protested in the strongest
terms his perpetual good will and love declaring that the sky would fall before he would bring an end to the peace. The evening before the attack, the Indians came as usual to the plantations with deer, turkeys, fish, fruits and other provisions to sell. That night, however, a warning was received which although too late to warn the most remote settlements, preserved many hundred from the tomahawk.

Chanco, an Indian boy who had been adopted by an Englishman named Pace, revealed the entire plot to his master. The man secured his house, and rowed away before dawn in desperate haste to Jamestown to give warning to the Governor.

Richard Pace is the one to whom honor has been paid as the savior of Jamestown in time.

"Old Estates in Surry County, Virginia.

Two Indians lived with Richard Pace at "Pace's Paines" one of them named Chanco had been converted to christianity and was treated by Pace as a son. These Indians knew of Opechancanough's plot to massacre the whites on March 22, 1622. On the night before the Massacre, Chanco was urged by the other Indian, his brother, to kill Pace. Instead of killing Pace, Chanco revealed the plot to him. Pace immediately secured his house, and before dawn rowed to Jamestown and told the Governor of it who sent out warnings to all settlements within reach. Capt. Smith says that thousands were thus saved by this one converted infidel.

Ref: "History of the Colony of Virginia," by Charles Campbell, published in 1847, page 29:

Thus fell in so short a space of time one twelfth part of the colonists, including six members of the Council. The desctruction might have been universal but for the disclosure of a converted Indian named "Chanco" who during the night before the Massacre, revealed the plot to one Richard Pace with whom he lived. Pace, upon receiving this intelligence, after fortifying his own house, repaired before day to Jamestown and gave the alarm to Sir Francis Wyatt, the Governor. His vigilance saved a large part of colony.
A friendly Indian named "Chanco" revealed the plot to Pace and after providing for the safety of his own family, he went to Jamestown and warned the people there.

Jamestown was saved from the Massacre by the friendliness of an Indian servant belonging to Richard Pace who informed his master of the plot. Pace was then at his plantation called "Pace's Paines" on the south side of James River in Charles City County. He rowed to Jamestown and told the Governor of it. When the Indians appeared before the fort at Jamestown the next morning they were received with cannon fire.

Six of the Counsell (these were George Thorp, Nathaniel Powell, John Berkeley, Samuel Macock, John Rolf, Michael Laffsworth) suffered under their treason and the slaughter has been universal if God had not put it into the heart of an Indian, who lying in the house of one Pace, was urged by another Indian, his brother, that day with him the night before to kill Pace, as he should doe Perry, which was his friend, being so commanded from their King, telling him, also the next day the execution should be finished.

Perry's Indian presently arose, and he revealed
it to Pace, and thus them that escaped were saved by this one converted infidel. Pace, upon this, securing his house before day, rowed to Jamestown and told the Governor of it, whereby they were prevented and at such other plantations as possibly intelligence could be given; and where they saw us upon the guard, at the sight of a piece they ran away, but the rest were most slain, their houses burnt and arms and munitions as they found they took away and some still also they destroyed.

Ref: "William & Mary College Quarterly," Vol. 16, page 221, 222, 223:

Among the settlers at Pace's Paines (as the place was called) at the time of the Massacre in 1622, were Richard Pace, Isabella, his wife, Francis Chapman and William Perry. They had among their servants two Indian brothers, who had embraced the christian religion, one in the employ of Mr. Pace and the other in the employ of Mr. Perry.


Some of the men are returned to their former plantations. In the months following the Massacre, the people abandoned their country places.

Page 369: It was 20 or 30 days ere they could resolve what to do, but at last it was concluded all of the petty plantations should be abandoned, and drawne onely to make good 5 or 6 places where all their labours now for the most part rebound to the Lords of these lands where they were resident.

Now for want of boats, it was impossible upon such a sudden uprising to bring also their cattle and many other things, which with much time, charges and labour they had then in possessions with them, all which for the most part on their departure were burnt, ruined and destroyed by the savages.

In one of the 1914 Virginia Historical Magazines is an article about Richard Pace, taken from the 1623 court records of James City County, Virginia. The article dealt
with a law suit concerning the clearing of some land in April 1622.

It mentions Richard Pace of "Paces Paines" and proves that he returned to his plantation as soon as it was safe to do so.

Ref: "Virginia Magazine of History and Biography," Vol. 23, page 271. A courts held XXV d'ye of Maye, 1625:

Hugh Crowther, gent. sworne and examined sayeth in April 1622 Capt. William Powell's man and divers others did cleere a piece of ground which Capt. Samuel Matthews now vseth (note v. is our w) owt of which ground Capt. Powell had shares and Mr. Hugh Crowther had 11 (eleven) shares, one Richard Pace had X (ten) shares, Thomas Gates had 2 (two) shares and Richard Richards had 1 (one) share, and further sayeth that the ground was not cleared for Capt. Powell or any other man in p'ticular, so far as ever he did heere, or knowe, and further sayeth that six of his family who did help to cleere the grounde had noe share. (There is a lot more for and against whether the land belonged to Capt. Powell or the Company and consequently to the men who cleared it. Edward White and Zachary Crispe swore for the clearers).

On page 272, Richard Richards swore and examined sayeth that he went over the grounde with Richard Pace and Richard Pace went as overseer for Capt. Powell, and sayeth that he never hurde but that it was Capt. Powell's grounde and that they cleered it as Capt. Powell's grounde (as he ever conceaved).

Page 277. A courte held XII of June 1625 (continuing case about cleared land), Capt. Powell had died, Capt. Mathews had built on part of the contested land. William Perry swore and examined sayeth that Capt. Powell told Capt. Mathews before he died to go to Mr. Crowther and p'suade him to have his grounde and Captain Mathews could p'cure Mr. Crowther other groundes either at "Martin's Hundred" or at the Colledge in leave thereof.

And further sayeth Capt. Powell, offered Mr. Pace, he should have the grounde if he would continue there and bulite upon if he did not intend to goe to his owne plantation, but Richard Pace goings to his owne plantation did leave it upp to Capt. Powell.

"Richard Pace deeds this land to Capt. Powell."

A reference from "Virginia History and Biography," Vol. 22:

A court held the last day of Nov. 1624, Thomas Gates swore and examined sayeth that he coming to John Jackson and went with him to George Clarke, etc. Decree: "We see no right invested in Capt. Powell and his children in the land now in controversy whereby we can by a legal order put Capt. Samuel Mathews who is presently seated thereon, out of possession.

In April 1622, a number of men, among whom was Richard Pace, cleared a piece of ground over which there was a suit in the courts as to whether the land belonged to Capt. William Powell, or to the Company. The court was held, May 25, 1625 and at that time was claimed by Capt. Samuel Mathews. Out of this ground Richard Pace had ten (10) shares. If the land belonged to the Company, then it would belong to the men who cleared it.

After the Massacre, Pace's Paines was abandoned for the period of about a year. In October 1622 and January 1623, Richard Pace had petitioned the Governor and Council to be allowed to return to his plantation and to fortify and strengthen the place with a "good company of able men." The said petition was granted.


The humble petition of Richard Pace humbly sheweth whereas ye petitioner heretofore hath enjoyed a plantation on the other side of ye water and hath bestowed great cost and charges upon it building there and clearing of ground but at length was enforced to leave ye same by ye savidge crewelty of ye Indians. Yeth now purposeing (by God's assistance to fortifie and strengthen ye place with a good company of able men hee doth desire to inhabit there againe and by yor leave freely to enjoy his said plantation promising to doe all such things as by yor directions hee shall bee enjoined, either for ye better safeguard and defence of ye people yt shall either put over or in what ever yoo shall please to command him. In tender consideration whereof may itt please you Worps to grant and hee shall be bound to pray for yor health and happiness in this worlde and
in ye worlds to come.

Petition granted. Ref: "Virginia Magazine," Vol. 23, page 271. Page 277, "Richard Pace deeds this land to Captain Powell." This refers to the land which the men before referred to, had cleared. Richard Pace preferred to return to Pace's Paines and sold his shares to Capt. Powell.

Ref: "Virginia Magazine" Vol. 19, page 388 and 28, page 99:

Thomas Gates, who came in the Swan in 1609, and his wife, Elizabeth, who came in the Warwick, 1620, was living at Pace's Paines on the south side of the river opposite James Towne in 1624-5, there were at this time four (4) forts at the place near.

Ref: "William & Mary Quarterly" Vol. 9, page 212:

Richard Pace lived at Pace's Paines with Capt. Wm. Perry, distant 4 miles from Jamestown, on the s. side of the river. Pace's Paines was a sort of community, Richard Pace only lived about four (4) years after he moved to Pace's Paines, and only about two (2) years after he returned to his plantation (when it was deemed safe to do so after the Massacre) in 1623. He died early in 1625.

The testimony which Mrs. Isabell Perry gave in two sessions of court, one in the May 9th, 1625 session of the General Court, in James City County, VA, and the other Sept. 11, 1626 session of the same court proves without any doubt that Richard Pace had died before May 9, 1625.

Ref: "Virginia Magazine," Vol. 23, page 22 (Ink folio 117)

Minutes of Council and General Court:

A courte held the 9th May 1625 being p'sent Sr. Francis Wyatt, Governor and c (Knight), Capt. Frs. West, etc., page 22-- Mrs. Isabell Perry sworne and examed sayeth yt she being in Mrs. Blaneys house Docto Potts came into the house and Mrs. Blany said unto him and Mr. Doctor Pott, "You have killed a hog of myne, I wold you wold let me have a peece part with you." To wch Doctor Pott replied, "It is trew there is a hog kild, but whether it be yours I know nott." Mrs. Blany replied, "It is aparent enouffe yt is myne." Yt Doctor Pott said, "As I take it my wiffe hath given it amongst her people." Footnote: Isabella

-27-
was then wife of William Perry, also later a member of the Council. She was the widow of Richard Pace.


A courte held the 11th Sept. 1626, being present S'r George Yeardley, Knight Governor and c, Capt. West, Doctor Pott. Daniel Watkins sworne and examined sayeth yt about Feb. last part this deponent being at Mr. Perry's plantation. Goodwife Jane Wright, wife of Robert Wright, the accused moved in 1626, from James City. Footnote (14), Mrs. Isabella Perry was widow of Richard Pace and wife of Capt. Wm. Perry afterwards member of Council.

The Perry's at that time lived on land adjoining Burrows Hill on the south side of James River.

Mrs. Isabell Perry sworne and examined sayeth that uppon ye losinge of a logg of light wood out of the eforts, Goodwife Wright rayled uppon a girl for stealing the same whereupon she charged to said Goodwife Wright, and said that she had done many bad things at Kikotau, whereupon this examinant chi'd the said Goodwife Wright and said unto her, "Yf thou knowest thyself cleare of what she charged thee, why dost thou not complaine and cleare thyself of the same? Why dost thou not complaine and cleare thyself of the same? And further sayeth yt Dorothy Behethleu (15) asked this examinate (Isabel) why she did suffer Goodwife to be at her house, saying she was a very bad woman, and was accompted a witch among all at Kikotau. Page 12, no record of the action of the court is given in connection with the evidence, but later there is an entry of a fine imposed on Joane Wright.

The next record that we have of Isabella (Pace) is a land grant given to her and to her son, George Pace, in September 1628, which places them still residing at Pace's Paines.

Records on page 64, "Cavalier's & Pioneers" which contains an abstract from the land grants of Virginia, as well as a record on page 10 of the same volume, shows very plainly that the 400 acres granted to George Pace in 1628, were given to his father in two parcels and on two separate occasions. Richard Pace had died by September 20, 1628, and his widow, Isabella, had married Capt. William Perry, according to the
Land Grant Office Records of that date. The property would have been inherited by George, son of Richard, was held in trust for him until he should become of age, by his stepfather, William Perry. In 1628, George Pace was given his property on September 1, 1628. The family continued to live at Pace's Paines until 1635, when it was sold.

Ref: "First Republic in America" page 400, 508, 468, 621:

Isabella Perry, wife of William Perry, gent (as her first dividend) 200 acres in the Corporation of James City on the south side of the main river, formerly granted to her and late husband, Richard Pace, deceased, December 5, 1620. Said land adjoined westerly that of John Burrowes (now in the tenure of John Smith) and thence extending east to the land granted George Pace bearing date with these presents--100 acres due for her own personal adventure as an "Ancient Planter" and the other 100 as the dividend of Francis Chapman (granted him December 5, 1620) and by him made over to Richard Richards and Richard Dolphenby, and by them granted unto said Isabella Perry, at a court at James City, January 20, 1621. Granted by Francis West, September 20, 1628.

Ref: "First Republic in America," pages 405, 408, 621:

George Pace, son and heir to Richard Pace (as his first dividend) 400 acres in the Corporation of James City on the south side of the river at the plantation called Pace's Paines and formerly granted to his deceased father, Richard Pace, December 5, 1620, adjoining on the west the lands of his mother, Isabella Perry, and on the east the lands of Francis Chapman, now in the possession of William Perry, Gent., his father-in-law, and bounded on the north by the main river. Granted by Francis West September 1, 1628.


Isabella Perry, Sept. 29, 1628, 200 A within the Corporation of James City, on the southern side of the river at a plantation called Pace's Paines and formerly granted to herself and her late husband, Richard Pace, deceased.


Ref: "William & Mary Quarterly Magazine," Vol. 2, page 156:

The Colonial Council of Virginia members

Perry, William 1632
Menefee, George 1642
Perry, Henry 1655

In 1629, Pace's Paines was represented in the House of Burgesses by William Perry and John Smyth; and in 1630, Pace's Paines and Smyth's Mount were represented by William Perry. When William Perry was made "Councillor" he moved from Pace's Paines in James City County and lived on his plantation (adjoining tract of Capt. George Menefie) "Buckland" and he died there in 1637.

Isabella Pace was the 2nd wife of Capt. William Perry. He had one son, Henry Perry, by his first wife. Isabella had one son, George Pace, by her first husband, Richard Pace. When Capt. Perry and Isabella moved to Buckland in Charles City County, both Henry Perry and George Pace went along. This was in 1632 or 1633, Pace's Paines was sold in 1635. "Buckland", this settlement adjoined "Westover" and contained the plantation of Capt. George Menefie of the Council and Capt. William Perry who died August 6, 1637.

Ref: "Cradle of the Republic," by Tyler, page 207:

There is only one older tombstone in Virginia, that of Capt. Wm. Perry of Westover, who formerly lived at Pace's Paines and died in 1637. The inscription on tombstone now worn away.
Campbell, the historian, states that it then bore a shield and the following epitaph:

Here lyeth the body of
Captain William Perry who
died near Westover
in this Colony
who departed this life
the 6th day of August
Amo Domini, 1637

He was buried at the Church of Westover Parish at the site of which his tomb remains, the oldest in Virginia. Between the graves of William Perry and that of Walter Aston is that of Theoderic Bland, in Westover Church yard. There is no record of when his wife, Isabella died or where she is buried. Nothing is recorded of her after 1628 when she and her son, George, repatented "Pace's Paines." That property was sold in 1635. If the Pace family ever returned to James City County there is nothing to indicate it.

The Perry's lived on the opposite side of the James River from "Maycock's Hundred." After William Perry's death, his son, Henry, inherited the whole "Buckland." He married Mary Menefee.

Synopsis: We know definitely that the Pace immigrant came from England and settled in James Cittie, "over the river from James Town and four miles above" within the limits of the present Surry County. We know that he was Richard Pace, and that he came before 1616. He is named in the earliest records, "as among the 'Ancient Planters' residing in the vicinity of James Towne."

We do not know at what date or on what boat he came, but it had to be before 1616, or he would not be called an "Ancient Planter." He was not "sent over by the Company," but paid his own passage over. Isabella did the same, we think they came with Gates and Somers in 1611. The Colonists had to be Englishmen-- the Established Church of England must be the religion of the Colony.

Ref: "Brown's First Republic," page 318:

The Virginia Assembly had decreed that planters who came at their own cost before the coming away of Sir Thomas Dale (that is, prior to 1616) should have as the first division of land, 100 acres for their own personal adventure, and also the same for every single share, amounting to the
sum 12-10-0 paid into the London Company of Virginia. It is known that Captain William Perry came to Virginia in 1611. (Hotton).

In 1611, Sir Thomas Gates with a fleet of 6 ships carrying 300 persons, including 20 women, arrived.

Richard Pace and Isabella probably came at the same time. No record of his arrival has been found. Capt. Perry was "sent over by the Company" so his name has been registered. Since Richard Pace and Isabella paid their own passage, unless we could find a ship and get a list of the passengers we may never know when they came, or whether they married in England, or over here.

Both Richard Pace and his wife, Isabella, received land as "Ancient Planters" when the "first dividends" were parceled out they received 100 acres each "due for the personal adventure" on Dec. 5, 1620, so it is safe to assume that they were married before they came to this country.

The list of "Ancient Planters" includes those who are known to have come to Virginia before the close of the year 1616, survived the Massacre, appear in the Muster of 1624/5 as then living in Virginia.

So, we have Richard Pace of Virginia, an "Ancient Planter" of James Cittie, "just over the river from Jamestown" who received a "dividend" in 1620, under the Charter of 1618, of 100 acres of land. His wife, Isabella, received likewise as her "dividend" as an "Ancient Planter" on the same date, an equal amount of land. They named their plantation of 200 acres, "Pace's Paines."

From records in the Land Office it is learned that he received his "dividend as an Ancient Planter, Dec. 5, 1622," (a plantation which he patented jointly with Thomas Gates and Francis Chapman) of 600 acres and named Pace's Paines upon which he lived until his death which occurred about the early part of 1625.

Ref: "Records of the Virginia Company" Vol. 3, pages 494-555, 680/682:

The total destruction of the James City County records prevent any allusion being made as to the maiden name of Isabella, wife of Richard Pace, of Virginia in will or deed, or transfer of title. The Land Grant Records are all that can be obtained in Virginia and they only prove
that she received 200 acres as their "first dividend" together with her husband, 100 acres as "Ancient Planter" on Dec. 5, 1620 and that they named the place Pace's Paines. This brought the plantation to 200 acres. It was later enlarged by 400 acres more, 100 acres to Isabella and 300 acres to Richard. By this, the plantation of Pace's Paines increased to 600 acres.

The 300 acres were granted to Richard Pace for transporting six persons who came in the Marmaduke in 1621.

Ref: "The Researcher Magazine," Vol I, page 161. There are many Early Land Grants in this volume. Index to the following Patents, those brought over by Pace:

- Bailey, Lewis (by Pace) in Marmaduke 1621
- Jones, Richard (by Pace) in Marmaduke 1621
- Mason, Ann (by Pace) in Marmaduke 1621
- Marker, Roger (by Pace) in Marmaduke 1621
- Pulle, Bennett (by Pace) in Marmaduke 1621
- Skinner, John (by Pace) in Marmaduke 1621

The 100 acres were made over to Isabella at a Court at James Citty, 21 January 1621, "being the devdt of Francis Chapman, having been granted to him, 5 Dec. 1620 and by him made over to Richard Richards and Richard Dolphenby and by them made over to sd Isabella at a court at James Citty, 21 Jan. 1621.

We can readily see how the original plantation of Pace's Paines grew from the original 200 acres to a 600 acre plantation. In 1628, Isabella and George Pace repatented it.

Virginia highways have been marked with double faced metal markers with large lettering, supplemented with a hand book giving the inscriptions of the road markers and their numbers. The traveler has only to catch the number on a marker and turn to that number or title in the booklet to find the inscription. The Virginia Conservation Commission has used the plan of presenting a connected story of historical happenings.

The County in which the marker stands if given in the Index with the name of the marker. Not all markers are located at or near the exact sites of the events or places they commemorate. In many instances the markers are miles from
the spots, and in such instances the markers are an approximate distance and direction is given in the body of the inscription. These markers point out everything of historic value and there are several distinguishing James City plantations and sites among them. One of these markers reads like this:


This place, seven miles north was settled by Richard Pace in 1620. On the night before the Indian Massacre of March 22, 1622, an Indian, Chanco, revealed the plot to Pace, who reached Jamestown in time to save the settlers in that vicinity. Surry County: Three and one-half miles west of Surry Court House.

Ref: "William & Mary Quarterly Magazine," Vol. 9, page 212:

Richard Pace of Pace's Paines with Capt. William Perry, Francis Chapman, Thomas Gates, Richard Richards and Richard Dolphenbe, distance four miles from Jamestowne on the south side of the river, in James City. "Burrow's Hill" adjoined the land of Richard Pace on the west. Pace's Paines grew to be a little community of plantations, the whole neighborhood being known as Pace's Paines. The 600 acres granted Richard and Isabella Pace included part of Mt. Pleasant. 1635, included in the grant of 1,200 acres to Thomas Swaun, bounded west from "Smythe's Mount" at Four Mile Tree.

"Burrowe's Hill"-- Ref: "William and Mary College Quarterly Magazine" Vol 16, pages 221, 222, 223:

In 1624, John Burrowe's who married Bridget (widow of Rev. Richard Buck) lived with his wife and her Buck children at Pace's Paines where he called his residence "Burrowe's Hill." Not long after he sold his right to John Smith who changed the name "Burrowe's Hill" to "Smith's Mount" and in 1629, Pace's Paines was represented in the Assembly by Lieut. William Perry and John Smyth.

In a land grant 1620, Isabella (Pace) Perry repatented land called Pace's Paines abutting west on land of John Burrowes now in the tenure of John Smith.
Ref: "Cavaliers & Pioneers," Vol. I, page 62. Land Grants, Isabella Perry. Isabella Perry, Wife of William Perry, Gent. 200 acres within Corp. of James City, 20 Sept. 1628. At the south side of plantation called "Pace's Paines" granted to herself and her husband, Richard Pace (deceased) 5 Dec. 1620, W. on land of John Burrowes now in the tenure of John Smith, E. to land granted to her son, George Pace, and N. on the main river, 100 acres for her own per. adv. being an "Ancient Planter" and the other 100 acres as the devell of Francis Chapman having been granted to him 5 Dec. 1620, and by him made over to Richard Richards and Richard Dolphenby and by them made over to sd Isabella at a court at James City, 21 Jan. 1621. Granted by Francis West, Sept. 20, 1628.

Later, the Perry's are found up the James River at Buckland in Charles City County, and the George Pace at Maycox, (Paces Paines having been sold) while the old settlements at Four Mile Tree were secured by Col. Henry Browne, member of the Council of State. After this, the place remained in the Browne family until 1800.

Ref: "Some Old Surry Families" — Four Mile Tree

Four Mile Tree has many associations. It obtained its name from a tree distance 4 miles from Jamestown which marked in 1619 the western limit on the south side of James River of the Corporation of James City as defined by Gov. Argall. Here in 1624, James Burrowes patented 150 acres of land and called it Burrowe's Hill and the place afterwards passed to one John Smith whose executors sold the land to Col. Henry Browne, one of Sir William Berkeley's Council, who, in 1643, obtained a patent for 2,000 acres.

Ref: "Old Estates in Surry County, Virginia"

Mount Pleasant— A part of Mt. Pleasant was included in the 600 acres granted to Richard Pace in 1620 and later known as Paces Paines, all of the place seems to have been included in the grant of 1,200 acres to Thomas Swann in 1635, bounded west from Smith's Mount and Four Mile Tree. It was the home of the Cooke family. Four Mile Tree, Mt. Pleasant and Paces Paines were in the present County of Surry. Surry was cut off from James City in 1652.
In "The Conquest of Virginia" (the second attempt) by Conway Whittle Sams, page 162-A, there is shown a sketch of a point of land on the south side of the James River designated as Pace's Paines.

"Old Surry, Thumbnail Sketches of Places of Historic Interest In Surry County, VA" by W. W. Bohannan, contains descriptions of old estates, among them, Pace's Paines.

Ref: "The Cradle of the Republic," by Tyler, page 207:

Adjoining Burrows Hill was Pace's Paines, an estate of 600 acres planted by Richard Pace, Frances Chapman and Thomas Gates. In the Massacre of 1622, Richard Pace saved Jamestown and many of the colonists. A converted christian, Chanco, who stayed with him revealed the plot, and Pace, after securing his house, rowed off to Jamestown in the early morning and informed the Governor. His widow, Isabella, married secondly Capt. William Perry of the Council.

His son and heir was George Pace who married the daughter of Capt. Samuel Maycock of the Council, killed by the Indians in the Massacre. George Pace moved to Capt. Maycock's plantation where his son, Richard, was living in 1659.

This place is situated east of Powell's Creek and was patented by Capt. Samuel Maycock, who came to Virginia about 1618.

Evidently, after Isabella married Capt. Perry she moved to the home of Capt. Perry and the property called Pace's Paines scheated. George Pace was probably not of age because when he and his mother repatented the land in 1628, the 400 acres given to him is described as being held for him by Wm. Perry, his "father-in-law" (meaning stepfather).

Ref: "Patents Issued During the Regal Gov.," page 12, James City, Book No. 1:

#62. Isabella Perry, Sept. 20, 1628, 200 acres within the Corporation of James City on the southern side of the river at the plantation called Pace's Paines and formerly granted to herself and her late husband, Richard Pace, dec'd.
Richard Pace is the one to whom honor has been paid as the savior of Jamestown in the Indian Massacre of 1622. There is a tablet to Chanco on the wall of the old Church at Jamestown. I have a photograph of the tablet. Mrs. R. E. Bell, who was Eugenia Pace, took a kodak picture of it. She gave the film to me and I had it enlarged. It reads thus:

In honor of Chanco, the Christian Indian boy whose warnings saved the colony of Virginia from destruction in the Massacre of 22 March 1622.

It is from this Richard Pace I of James City, VA, that eligibility to the Society of Colonial Dames of the 17th Century was established.

Ref: "Hayden's Genealogies," page 369:

It was 20 or 30 daies ere they could resolve what to doe, but at last it was concluded all the petty plantations should be abandoned, and drawne only to make good 5 or 6 places where all their labours, now for the most part, must rebound to the Lords of those lands where they were resident.

In the months following the Massacre, the people abandoned their country places. Every summer after the Massacre of 1622, the settlers with the methodical determination of Englishmen, made forays against the Indians and destroyed their towns and standing crops.

Thoughts of Indians and the fear of sudden death must have been foremost in the minds of our earliest settlers, for the scant records they have left behind show their desperate situation and the means they used to defend themselves.

(Ref: Boddie's "Seventeenth Century, Isle of Wight Co., VA," page 84).

The General Assembly of 1624, the 2nd one to meet in Virginia enacted in March of that year, "that every dwelling house shall be palisaded for defense against Indians, that the inhabitants go not aboard ships, or in such numbers to
endanger the plantations."

Lists were made showing the names of those living and dead. Neither Richard nor Isabella nor their son, George, are given in the Census of February 1623, or in the Census of 1624, yet there is conclusive proof that all three of them survived the Massacre and evidently went back to live at Pace's Paines in James Cittie.

Hotton in one of his lists gives: Living: Richard Pace, Francis Chapman and Thomas Gates at Pace's Paines. An article taken from the 1623 Court Records of James City, and dealing with the law suit concerning the clearing of some land in April 1622, mentions Richard Pace of Pace's Paines, and proves that he returned to his plantation as soon as it was safe to do so.

Richard Pace lived only about three years after the Massacre. There is no record when he died, where he died or what was the matter with him. Testimony which Mrs. Isabella Perry gave in two sessions of Court, one on May 9th 1625 session of the General Court in James City, VA, and the other in the Sept. 11th, 1626 session of the same Court proves without any doubt that Richard Pace had died before May 9, 1625.


Richard Pace was early settler on south side James River at Pace's Paines and by warning of his Indian servant which he carried to the settlement, saved Jamestown in the Indian uprising in the year 1622.


William Perry moved from Pace's Paines in James City and lived on his plantation (adjoining that of Capt. Geo. Menefie)

-38-
Buckland. He evidently made this move when he became Councilor in 1632. He died there in 1637.


Very little is known about George Pace between the years of 1628 and 1655. It is certain that he was of age in 1628, and living at Pace's Paines. It is believed that he moved to Buckland, in Charles City County, when the Perry's did, in 1632 and 1633. William Perry was elected Councilor and the members of Council were required "to reside near the Governor," which was across the James River from Paces Paines. Pace's Paines was sold in 1635.

It is certain that he married Sarah Maycock in 1637. There is evidence that George Pace died in 1654, that he took out land grants in Charles City County in 1650 and 1652, and that he had a son, Richard, who became of age in 1659.

Both George and Sarah (Maycock) Pace were dead in 1655 when Richard, their minor son, applied for a guardian.

It has been proven that Pace's Paines originated December 5, 1620. The Records of Virginia Company recognized Richard Pace as "planter" in 1621. He is mentioned in a court record of May 1625, as having cleared land in 1622. He is called "Ancient Planter" as was also his wife, Isabella, called "Ancient Planter," and was awarded land as such.

Records on page 64 of "Cavaliers & Pioneers" which contains an abstract from the land grants of Virginia (as well as record on page 10 of the same volume) shows very plainly that in 1628 the 400 acres granted to George Pace were given originally to his father, Richard Pace. Isabella (Pace) Perry, a patent on the south side of the river formerly granted to herself and her late husband, Richard Pace.

Ref: "Virginia Land Office" Book I, page 64:

George Pace son and heir to Richard Pace, deceased, 400 acres on the south side of the James River at a plantation called Pace's Paines, or Pace's Plains.

Furthermore, we have proof that "our Paces" were descended from this Richard Pace and wife, Isabella, of Pace's Paines, a plantation on the
south side of James River in Virginia, who died in or near the year, 1625.

It has been established that Isabella Pace received a land grant in her own right as an "Ancient Planter" in 1620, that it comprised a part of Pace's Paines that by the year 1635 Pace's Paines had been sold, that both Isabella and her son, George, were living at Pace's Paines in 1628, when they re-patented land belonging to the estate of the deceased, one Richard Pace, immigrant.

It has been given that Isabella, widow of Richard Pace, married secondly in 1625 to Capt. William Perry, that George Pace moved to Charles City County with the Perry family about 1632 or 1633. He married in that County in or about 1637, Sara Macocke.

George Pace patented land in Charles City County in 1650 and again in 1652, he and Sara, both, were dead by 1655. Their son, Richard, became of age in 1659. It has been established that Richard Pace (George, Richard) was a minor in 1655, that he had married in 1622 to Mary and was living in Charles City County in 1673. Very little is known of him after that date.


George Pace, 1,700 acres, Charles City County, August 1650 (page 252).

Living on south side of James River formerly called "Matocks" beginning at the mouth of a little swamp by the riverside where Pierce his hundred takes etc., ending, running, etc., west to a swamp which leads to a swamp which leads to Powell's Creek and along the creek to the river. Trans. of 34 persons.

Ref: "Cavaliers and Pioneers," by Nugent, page 273, Abstracts of Virginia Land Patents, 1623-1800:

George Pace, 507 acres, Charles City County, 6 Dec. 1652, page 170. On south side James River and east side of Powell's Creek. Transfer of 10 persons.

Land Grant--George Pace, Office of the Secretary of the Commonwealth, "I declare the above to be a true copy of the Grant in the volume named, Land Grant Records, Book 2, p. 252, signed by Rebecca Johnston."

To all &c whereas, &c. Now know yee that I, the said Sr. William Berkeley, Knight, Governor, give and grant unto George Pace, seventeen hundred acres of land lying on the south side of James River in the County of Charles City, commonly called by the name of "Matocks" beginning at the mouth of a little swamp by the riverside where Pierce his hundred Lakes Ending Soe running south unto the woods one hundred and sixty cheynes thence two hundred cheynes west, thence south eighty cheynes thence one hundred forty-six cheynes west to a swamp which leads to Powell's Creek thence along the Creek to the River and along the River east to the place where it began. The said land being due unto the said George Pace by and for the transportation of thirty-four persons into the Colony, all whose names are in the record mentioned under this Patent. To have and to hold &c. To be held &c yeilding & c. which payment is to be made seven years after the first grant or seating thereof etc. Dated the first of August 1650.

Alexander Nicholson
Daniell Wackesly
Thomas Lowe
Thomas Juston
Dayll Thompson
Thomas Wells
Elizabeth Bronson
Walton Novell
John Lightfoot
John Warren
Freeman Ansell
Benja Bourne
William Gryer
Thomas Carrs

Neal Montgomery
Dick, a negro
John Heyward
Thos. Ridding
Nicho Kell
Jean Thompson
Alex Maxwell
John Lawmor
Wm. Partridge
J. Mackory
Elizabeth Arotors
Robert Deesham
Thomas Scott
Richard Rawlins
There is a deed in the Charles City County records by which Richard Pace of Powell's Creek, son and heir apparent of George Pace, son and heir as the first issue by (the) mother, Sarah Macock, wife unto my aforesaid father, both deceased, confirms a sale of 800 or 900 acres lying near unto Pierce's Hundred, also Flower due Hundred. To Mr. Thomas Drew as per will of his father, Oct. 12, 1650. (This record was in 1659).

Ref: "Cavaliers and Pioneers" by Nugent, page 203, Thomas Drew, Gent., 490 acres Charles City County, 26 Oct. 1658. Lying on the north side of Flower de Hundred Cr, bounded north upon land purchased by Mr. Pace, south upon sd cr. and north east upon Snow Cr.

In the Charles City County Record Book for 1655-1665, page 5, under date of January 4, 1655 is the following:

Whereas, Richard Pace, the orphan and heir of George Pace, deceased, has at this court made choice and humbly desired confirmation of Mr. William Baugh to be Guardian of him and his estate during his minority.

The court doth therefore hereby grant and confirm his said request requiring the said Guardian manage duly and justly all estate (all) belonging to the said orphane giving yearly accounts to the court of the same and the improvement delivering the whole to the said orphane at his full age.

Patents issued locate George Pace as late as 1652. Both George and Sarah (Maycock) Pace were dead by January 1655. George Pace is known to have sold land to Thomas Drew in 1650. Thomas Drew was a neighbor, as shown by a land grant of more land which he obtained in 1658. As soon as he became of age in 1659, Richard Pace, son of George, confirms this sale of his father to Thomas Drew.

Ref: Charles City County Records, 1655-1665, page 179:

Know all men by these present and witness that I, Richard Pace, sonne and heire apparent of Mr. George Pace of the County of Charles City, att Mount March in Virginia.
and sonn and heire as the first issue by
my mother, Mrs. Sarah Macock, wife unto
my aforesaid father (being both deceased)
do hereby by these presents for myself, my
heirs, exors admrs and assr's for ever
absolutely confirme and allow of the sale
of eight or nine hundred acres of land
being neere unto Pierce's Hundred also
Flowrydey Hundred, sold by my deceased
Mr. George Pace unto Mr. Thomas Drew as
per bill of sale learning date, the 12th
day of October, Ano 1650, may more large
apps. XXX Rchd Pace further confirms sale
to Thomas Drewe XXX Dated 25 February
Wit:
Anthony Wyatt Recorded 19 May 1659
Thomas Stegge
Joel Pryse, Col.

There is a notation in "Visitations of Warwickshire" 1682-
1683, which places the Maycock family in that county or
shire, in England. In recent issue of the Directory for
Scotland and the London Directory there are quite a number
of Maycocks.

Ref: "Burke's General Armory." Maycock, Macock Arms, "Per
Fesse embattled ar and gu two cocks counter changed."

Ref: "Virginia Magazine," Vol. XXX, page 342, "Colonial
Church in Virginia," by Godwin:

Sam Maycock--Macocke. Admitted Sizar at
Jesus College, Cambridge, May 18, 1611.
Son of Roger, husbandman, of Yelverstaft,
Northamptonshire. Migrated to Cains
College, May 15, 1612. Matriculated 1612.
Scholar 1613-1614. Went to Virginia 1618.
Governor asked for ordination on account
of scarcity of ministers. Killed by the
Indians, March 22, 1622.

Captain Samuel Maycock left an only child, a daughter, Sarah.
Richard Pace left an only known son and heir, George.
George Pace II (Richard1) married Sarah, daughter of Capt.
Samuel Maycock.

Ref: "The General Historie of Virginia," by Capt. John
Smith, 1624, The Fourth Book:
Sir George Yearley to beginne his government added to be of his Council, Capt. Francis West, Capt. Nathaniel Powell, Master John Pory, Master John Rolfe and Master William Wickham, and Master Samuel Macock and propounded to have a general assembly with all expedition.

Among the first appointees of the Council of State were: Sir George Yeardley, Knight, Capt. Francis West and Samuel Macock.

The members of the Council were to reside "about or near the Governor" and were to meet quarterly.


Ref: "Virginia Magazine," Vol. 15, page 404. "In 1618, Samuel Macock was on the Council of Virginia."


Ref: "Colonial Virginia" by W. R. Cridlin, page 52. "In 1618, three new settlements were established, Flower dieu Hundred; Martin's Hundred and Maycock's Hundred."

Ref: "Records of the Virginia Co.," Vol. 4, page 554. "Mr. Samuel Macock's divident; Persey's Hundred; acres planted."

Ref: "Smith's General Historie," The Fourth Book, pages 368-369. "The numbers that were slaine in those several plantations, #30, at Master Macock's Divident, Captain Samuel Macock and 4."

Ref: "Virginia Historical & Biographical Magazine," states, "Sam Maycock was a Cambridge scholar and gentleman of birth, virtur and industry. In March 1617, Gov. Argall requested the authorities in England, that Mr. Macock might be obtained. In 1619 Gov. Yeardley appointed him member of the Council; he and four others were killed in the Massacre by the Indians, on the estate of his on James River called "Maycox" (this described as Master Macock's Dividend in the territory of Great Weyonoke).

Capt. Samuel Maycock was a member of the First Legislative Assembly by virtue of being a Member of the Council. In
1619 the Colony of Virginia had become a democracy, for that year assembly of representatives from the various plantations was chosen to sit with the Governor's Council and to have a voice in making the laws.

Accordingly, July 30, 1619, the first legislative assembly that ever convened on the American continent met in the church at Jamestown. It consisted of the Governor, six Councillors and twenty Burgesses -- two from each of the ten settlements. It was called the House of Burgesses. At first there were two Burgesses from eleven plantations, or burroughs.

There was no plantation of "Pace's Paines" until 1620, so it was not represented in the "First House of Burgesses." Descendents are, however, eligible to membership in Colonial Patriotic Organizations because Captain Samuel Maycock was one of the six members of the Council who met with the Burgesses.

The inscription below on the monument at Jamestown, Virginia, in honor of the First Council of America and the Burgesses, who were members of the First House of Burgesses. Among the names is that of "Master Samuel Macock."

**INSCRIPTION**

The Council of Estate

Captain Francis West  Master John Rolfe
Capt. Nathaniel Powell  Master John Pory
Rev'd William Wickham  Master Samuel Macock

Samuel Maycock came to the Colony at his own cost.


Maycox may have been abandoned after the Massacre, it may have lapsed, have been re-patented, it may have still belonged to the estate of Capt. Maycock, in trust for his infant daughter, or sold. We can find no record of any disposition being made of the place at all. It is known when Samuel Maycock came to Virginia, he became one of
Sir George Yeardley's Council in 1618 and that he patented "Maycock's Hundred" in that year. He was killed in the Massacre of 1622. There is no record as to what became of Mrs. Samuel Maycock, nor who she was. Records show that Sarah, their only child, was born in 1621. It is not likely that Capt. Roger Smith would have taken Sarah Maycock into his household if the mother had been alive.

Ref: "Virginia Historical Magazine," Vol. 2, page 39:
Capt. Samuel Maycock was a Cambridge scholar, a gentleman of birth, virtue, and industry who was also doomed to fall in the Indian Massacre."


Ref: "Records of the Virginia Company," Vol. 3, page 555:
"They certifie further that beside Master George Thorpe, Master John Berkeley, Capt. Nath. Powell and his wife (the daughter of Master William Tracy) and Capt. Maycock, all gentlemen of birth, virtue and industry, and of the Council, these suffered under the terrible cruelty and treason."

Ref: "Virginia Magazine," Vol. 30, page 164:
"Captain Samuel Maycock is a Cambridge scholar. For this inoffensive lover of books also the red man gleefully whet his deadly tomahawk."

Ref: "Records of the Virginia Company," Vol. 4, page 554:
"Samuel Maycock and Capt. William Pierce owned adjoining plantations."

Ref: "Narratives of Early Virginia," by Tyler, page 368:
The number that were slaine in those several plantations in the Massacre, at Apamatuck's River, at Master Perce, his plantation, five miles from the College, 4. At Master Maycock's Divident, Capt. Macock and 4.
Whatever "Maycocks" there may be, now, are certainly not descendents of Capt. Samuel Maycock for the definite reason that Sarah would not have had that land grant had she had a brother, as the eldest son would have had it, nor did she have a sister, because daughters inherited jointly, while only the eldest son inherited.


May it please you to consider it will be all together requisite that I should be assisted with the full number of Cunsellors here being now but six neither could I tell in all the land where to chuse two more to add to this number, now Mr. Wickham being dead whom the whole land doth much be shared, there remaynes now but the number of 4 and those two of them Capt. Powell and Mr. Macock dwelling at Charles Hundred 40 miles from Jamestowne. It is a very great trouble for them opon all occasions to come away from their p'vate workes to attend here upon the publike, yet, in truth I find the both willing to spare what tyme they can for the publike with especially Mr. Macock, who is indeed my cheife strength in the right all though while Capt. Argall was here he did a stell run with the tyme as was his safest course for endeed there was no daring to deny that he would have done what was p'ticular. I have done as I was commanded by my Commissioners and instructions, may it please you that I refer you to the general letters, etc.


"The people haveing taken notice of his Maties Proclamation against the importacon of tabocco
into England have offered unto us the petitions here withal, sent, desireing us to be a means to commend it unto you as that is may be presented to his Matie and his graciously answer thereunto obtained, which their desire together with our owne, we do hereby offer unto you humbly entreating it maie bee delivered in as humble and effectuas manner as maie bee fp/ning the life of the plantacon dependeth upon the welfare of it, and so wee have you and the successse thereof to the blessings of the Almightye and rest." Most humbly at your command.

George Yeardley  Sam Maycock
George Thorpe    John Pory Sec.
Thos. Nuse       John Rolph
Nath. Powle      John Powntesse

Ref: "Henning's Statutes of Virginia," Vol 1, page 111:
Members of the Council named on July 24, 1621 included Samuel Macock.

Ref: "Tidewater, Virginia," by Wilstack, page 134:
Adjoining "Flower de Hundred" on the west is "Maycock's." The house greets the passer by on the river but the interest here is the man behind the name rather than the house. This name, which has survived the changes of more than 300 years, was given the plantation by its first owner (Samuel Maycock) who came to Tidewater about 1618, and settled here on the James. He was a graduate of Cambridge University and became of Sir George Yeardley's Council, and here he was killed in the Indian Massacre of 1622.

Ref: "Cradle of the Republic," by Tyler, page 212:
Maycock's Plantation. This place is situated east of Powell's Creek, and was patented by Captain Samuel Maycock, who came to Virginia about 1618. He was made by Sir George Yeardley, a member of his Council and he continued as such under Sir Francis Wyatt until he was killed in the Indian Massacre of 1622 when 5 others of the Council perished. After Capt. Maycock's death his daughter, Sarah,
married George Pace of "Pace's Paines" whose father, Richard Pace, had saved Jamestown in 1622.

Whatever "Maycock's" there may be now, are certainly not descendents of Capt. Samuel Maycock, for the definite reason that Sarah would not have had that land grant had she had a brother, as the eldest son would have had it, nor did she have a sister because daughters inherited jointly, while only the eldest son inherited.

Ref: "Virginia Magazine of History and Biography," Vol. 25, page 341. Footnote:

Samuel Maycock, or Maycox, settled near "Flower dew Hundred" at what was called "Master Maickco's Dividen." Certainly as late as 1655 "Maycock's" remained in the possession of the family of George Pace. In 1655, both George and Sarah (Maycock) Pace were dead and Richard, their son, applied for guardianship papers and asked that William Baugh be appointed guardian.

In 1659 Richard² (George, Richard) was of age and confirmed a deed which his father made in 1650. Therefore, Geo. Pace died between 1650 and 1655, probably 1654. Maycock was in possession of Roger Drayton in 1696, when he sold it to John Hamlin, who lived on a neighboring plantation. The Hamlin family lived on adjoining property to land owned by George Pace.

Ref: "Charles City County, Virginia," Land Grants, 1650-1666:

Stephen Hamlin, Oct. 26, 1650. 1,250 acres lying on the north side of Flor de Hundred Creek bounded on north by land purchased by Mr. Pace, south upon Flor de Hundred Creek.

Ref: "Virginia Historical Magazine," Vol. 1, page 220:

In 1723, John Hamlin sold "Maycocks" containing 250 acres purchased of Roger Drayton, in 1696, to Thomas Ravenscroft, of Wilmington Parish, James City County. The land was poor except 12 acres about the house, but the location (the situation) was not inferior to any on the river.
In a letter dated March 20, 1617, from the Governor of Virginia to the Company, he asked, on account of the scarcity of ministers, orders for Mr. Maycock, a Cambridge scholar.

Samuel Macock was a Cambridge scholar and a gentleman of birth, virtue and industry. In March 1617, Governor Argall requested the authorities in England that Mr. Macock might be obtained. In June 1619, Governor Yeardley appointed him a member of the Council.

The Colony was not long to enjoy the benefit of his services, however, for upon March 22, 1622, he and four others were killed by the Indians on the estate on James River in Prince George County, now called "Maycox" then described as Master Macock's Dividend in the Territory of Great Weynanoke. Capt. Maycock's only heir, Sarah, married George Pace.

Councillor Maycock left an only daughter, as in January 1625, Sarah Macock (aged 2 years and born in Virginia) was living in the house of Captain Roger Smith. She married George Pace whose father (Richard Pace of Pace's Paines) saved Jamestown.

The Muster of Capt. Roger Smith, Elizabeth Rolfe, aged 4 years and Sara Macock, aged 2 years, both born in Virginia.

At a court held May 8, 1626, being present Sir Francis Wyatt, Governor; Capt. Francis West; Capt. Roger Smith; Capt. Samuel Matthews; Mr. Wm. Claybourne, it is ordered that Sara Maycock for four servants brought over in the Abigaile in 1622, upon the accompts of Mr. Samuel Maycock, shall have 200 acres of land to be taken up by her in any place not formerly taken up.
Living at James City and within the Corporation thereof: Capt. Roger Smith, Mrs. Smith, Elizabeth Rolfe and Sara Macock. Mrs. Roger Smith was Joane, daughter of Capt. William Pierce, widow of John Rolfe. Elizabeth Rolfe was their daughter. Joane (Pierce-Rolfe) married secondly Capt. Roger Smith.

Ref: "Hotton's Emigrants," A list of names of the living in Virginia, February 16, 1623. The neighborhood round Pace's Paines and up to Maycocks, was composed of people who later came into this record, collaterally, if not lineally. The orphan, Sarah Maycock, was cared for and reared by Capt. and Mrs. Roger Smith. It is not known whether there was any relationship between them, or whether the court appointed a guardian for her.

It is highly probable that Sarah Maycock, having been left fatherless by the Massacre, was placed in care of Roger Smith, because he was given the authority over the Charles City, Henrico and Corendale survivors and removed many of them to places of greater safety and security.

Captain Maycock's plantation was 200 acres adjoining "Flower Dew Hundred" just opposite "Westover." It was added in 1618 to the shires already formed - in the present Prince George County.

Ref: "Virginia Magazine," Vol. 16, page 11:

Mr. Smuel Macock's Divident (Territory of Great Weyonoke). The island laid out for Chas. City and the Common Land.

Ref: "Virginia Magazine," Vol. 15, page 404:

Samuel Macock, a planter, who was appointed to the Council in 1618. On account of the lack of ministers, Mr. Macock had evidently been in charge of a Parish.

Patents locate George Pace as late as 1652 in Charles City County and deeds and dispositions show that both George Pace and his wife, Sarah Maycock Pace had died before Jan. 1655. We find records providing that their oldest son was named Richard and that he became of age in 1659. Records of transactions made by Richard Pace in the year 1661, show that he was then married to Mary. There are numerous deeds of record made in Charles City County by Richard Pace between 1659 and 1665, each indicating that he became of age, as early as February 1659. This establishes the birth of Richard, the oldest son of George Pace, as 1638.

Roger Drayton sold "Maycox" in 1696. How he became possessed of the plantation we do not know. In 1696, Richard Pace was 58 years old. It is believed that Roger Drayton was the son of John Drayton, but we have no proof of it. John Drayton had married Elizabeth Ward (daughter of James Ward) which does not make Roger Drayton heir to "Maycox."

All evidence points to the fact that both George and Sarah (Maycock) Pace were dead on Jan. 4, 1655, when eldest surviving son, Richard, appeared before the Charles City Court and asked that a guardian be appointed. William Baugh was duly appointed and Richard Pace is called "orphane and heire of George Pace, deceased."

How long William Baugh served we do not know, or if Richard Baker took his place, but Richard Baker stated that he was Richard's tutor.

It has been established that George Pace had a grant of 1,700 acres of land in Charles City County, beginning at the mouth of a little swamp by the river side, adjoining "Pierce's Hundred" running south into the woods, west to a swamp which leads to a swamp which leads to Powell's Creek along the Creek to the river, then east to the place where it began. It was called "Matocks" and the grant was given to George Pace August 1, 1650.

It has been established that Richard Pace inherited his father's property as "eldest sonne and heire" and records prove that when he became of age, 1659, he sold of this 1,700 acres viz: 200 acres to William Wilkins, Feb. 11, 1659; confirms a sale which George Pace made to Thomas Drewe of 800 or 900 acres on Feb. 25, 1659 and on February 28, 1659, he sold Thomas Maddox 300 acres. This left Richard Pace about 300 acres of the property called "Matocks."
On March 13, 1661/2, Richard Pace and wife, Mary, sold Richard Taylor the rest of the tract of land. In 1696, Roger Drayton sold "Maycox, a 250 acre tract to John Hamlin."

We find Richard Pace still owned the 507 acre tract of land which George Pace patented on the east side of Powell's Creek, Dec. 6, 1652. This was definitely not the plantation "Maycox." It was not known if Richard Pace lived on the property or not.

Sarah Maycock is said to have been born about 1621. She is said to have been living in the home of Capt. Roger Smith in James City in 1624/5. Capt Roger Smith was then married to Jane Pierce (widow of John Rolfe). After Capt. Smith's death, Jane, the widow, married Capt. George Menefee. It is known that Sarah Maycock went with the Menefee's to Charles City and lived at "Buckland." So, she lived adjoining the William Perry's and George Pace. Sarah Maycock and George Pace probably married in the early part of 1637.

Ref: "Hotton's List of Immigrants," page 224. James City 1624, Capt. William Pierce's Muster:

Capt. William Pierce came in the Sea Venture, Mrs. Jone Pierce in the Blessings. Mrs. Roger Smith was Jane, daughter of Capt. Wm. Pierce and wife Jane. She was the widow of John Rolfe. The more I check over the Macock family, the more Mrs. Samuel Macock looks like a Pierce, but that is not proved. Capt. Samuel undoubtedly married after he came to Virginia.
ISABELLA PACE AND WILLIAM PERRY

SUMMARY OF THE PACE LINE OF "PACE'S PAINES" VIRGINIA

Richard Pace (d. 1625) of "Paice's Paines" (or Points) in James City, Virginia, from England direct to Virginia, living "over the river from James Towne and 4 miles above," in 1620. He came, it is believed, with Gates and Somers, in 1611, paid his own passage over.

Wife was Isabella (maiden name unknown) who also was called an "Ancient Planter" and her only known child was George. Both Richard Pace and Isabella received land grants under the Charter of 1618 as "Ancient Planters" in December 1620, Richard 100 acres; Isabella 100 acres.

Richard Pace, through information obtained from a christian Indian boy, Chanco, warned the settlers and the authorities at James Towne of the Massacre of 1622 and saved many of the settlers. All the outlying plantations had been taken down after the Massacre, only 8 being left. He obtained permission to return to "Pace's Paines" in January 1623. In April 1622, Richard Pace, with a number of others cleared some land and received ten shares, he sold this land to Capt. Powell and returned to live at Pace's Paines.

Land records show three land grants to Richard Pace, viz: in 1620, 100 acres due for the personal adventure of himself. In 1621 due for the transportation of six persons in the Maramaduke, 300 acres. In 1626 a grant of land is recorded which may be a petition, because he was, then dead. Richard Pace had died before May 1625. The 1626 grant was for 200 acres in the Territory of Tappahawnoek.

The fact is verified that both Richard Pace and wife, Isabella, paid their passage over, and were not transported, indentured or sent over by the Company. We do not know whether they came on the same boat or separately, whether they were married in England or over here, to be named as "Ancient Planters" it had to be before the year 1616.

In 1625, Richard Pace died and on may 9, 1625, Isabella testified in a court trial as Mrs. Isabella Perry. She had married secondly Capt. Wm. Perry, afterward of the Council.
In September 1628, Isabella Perry, together with her son, George Pace, re-patented "Pace's Paines" and at this time the place comprised 600 acres. The Land Grant Book of 1625 gave Isabella 200 acres and George Pace 400 acres at "Pace's Paines."

We do not find the family in James City after 1635. Pace's Paines was sold to Thomas Swann in 1635. There is no record of Isabella or of George Pace there after 1628, they evidently evidently moved to Charles City when Capt. Perry was made a member of the Council in 1663.

Capt. Perry moved from Pace's Paines in James City and lived on his plantation (adjoining that of Capt. Geo. Menefee) "Buckland" and in 1637 Capt. William Perry died at his home in Charles City county. His wife is not buried beside him. He is buried in Westover churchyard. Their new home named "Buckland" was on the opposite side of the James River from Pace's Paines.

His son, Henry Perry, married Mary, the daughter of George Memefee. Isabella's son, George Pace, married Sarah Macock who was living with the Memefee's. Capt. William Perry left all his property to his son, Henry. Isabella is thought to have been Isabella Paine, but there is no proof.
GENERATIONS III AND IV

RICHARD PACE MARRIED MARY KNOWLES
JAMES PACE MARRIED SARAH EPPS

RICHARD PACE, SON OF GEORGE PACE

We find records of transactions made by Richard Pace in 1659, indicating he became of age in that year also, a deed, 1661, indicating he was then married to Mary.

In the Charles City County Record Book for 1655-1665, page 249, under date of October 10, 1660, is the following, the date is February 11, 1659:

Be it known unto all men to whose these present may come that I, Richard Pace, of Powell's Creek, planter, do devise, grant and sell and have by these presents devise granted and sold and forever made over from me my heirs executors or assigns certain neck of land lying between the branch commonly called western branch of Flower de Hundred Cr., etc.

There are numerous deeds of record made in Charles City County by Richard Pace between 1659 and 1665, other records indicate that Richard Pace was of age (legally) as early as February 1659.

Page 224, on this page of the same book under date of February 3, 1659, is the following:
abstract: Dispute regarding a cow between Richard Pace and Jno Drayton, to be settled by Mr. Jas. Ward and Mr. Ed Taylor.

On page 249, of the Charles City County Order Book, 1655-1665, is the following deed dated February 11, 1659, and recorded October 10, 1660:

Be it known unto all men to whom these presents may come that I Richard Pace of Powell's Creek, planter, do devise, granted and sold and forever made over from me my heirs, admrs. exrs. and assigns unto William Wilkins, his adm.
heirs, executors or assignes certain tract of land being between the branch commonly called the western branch of Flower de Hundred Creek.

John Drayton seems to have figured prominently in various records made by Richard Pace. He and James Ward and Richard Taylor seem to be connected with Richard Pace very closely. One of the first records we have of Richard Pace when he became of age, was a dispute with John Drayton over a cow.

Ref: "Charles City County Record Book 1655-1665:

On February 3, 1659, the commissioners of the Charles City Court established the markings of a cow on which Richard Pace claimed to belong to him.

Ref: "Charles City County Order Book, 1655-1665" page 249 we find this record which has been abstracted by Fleet, Vol. 10, page 79, Court Orders, deed 11 February 1659/60. Richard Pace of Powell's Creek, planter, sells William Wilkins a certain neck of land lying between the branch commonly called the Westowne Branch of Flower de Hundred Creek and the bottome commonly called by the name of Reedy Bottome and running up to Bland's path at the head coneyning by estimacon two hundred acres of land. Wit: Thomas Biggs, Thomas Parham. Signed Richard Pace.

Ref: "Fleet's Abstracts, Charles City County, VA, Court Orders, Vol. 12 (329)" Deed 13 March 1661/2, Richard Pace:

With the consent of my wife, Mary Pace, sells Richard Taylor land upon Powell's Creek beginning at Buckland Island so up the Creek to the road commonly called "The Hawk's Nest" and so butting upon the ready bottomes as far as William Wilkins plantation for 300 Sterling money of England. Signed Richard Pace, Mary X (her mark) Pace. Wit: Caesar Walpole, John Hobbs, John Efleriday, John Daniel. Recorded June 10, 1662.


Court Orders, 1658-1661. Know all men by these presents, and witnesses that I, Richard Pace

-58-
sonne and heire apparent of Mr. George Pace of the Comm. of Charles City att Mount March in Virginia, and sonn and heire as the first issue of my mother, Mrs. Sara Macocke, wife unto my aforesaid father (both being deceased) do hereby by these presents offer my self, my heirs exors, Admrs, and Assns, forever and absolutely confirms and allow of the sale of eight or nine hundred acres of land being near unto Pierces Hundred, also Flower de Hundred, sold by my dec'd father, Mr. Geo. Pace unto Mr. Thomas Drewe as per bill sale, etc. Signed Richard Pace, Rec. 19 May 1659.


"John Barker of Flourd Hundred to Mr. Thomas Drew of the same plantation, merchant, 30,000 lb. of tobacco to guarantee him, from all trouble charge mainteynance of maintayning XXX may arise of Hannah Pitt, daughter of my wife and forw'ch keeping of her, I John Barker, do hereby acknowledge to have read of my father-in-law, Mr. Thomas Drew, full satisfaction for her mainteynance." Signed John Barker. Wit: Richard Taylor and Richard Pace.

In 1636, William Barker purchased "Flower de Hundred" an adjoining plantation to "Maycocks." He sailed in the ship called "Ye Merchant's Hope" and was one of the group who founded the parish of that name. John Barker, his son, married the daughter of Thomas Drew. She was the widow of Robert Pitt.

Ref: In the Charles City Record Book, 1655-1665, page 3, bearing the date of January 4, 1665, is:

Whereas as Richard Pace, the orphan and heir of George Pace, deceased, has at this time and court made choise of and humbly desired confirmation of Mr. William Baugh to be the guardian of him and his estate during his minority the court doth hereby grant and confirm his said request. Whereas Richard Pace the orphan and heir of George Pace asks for Wm. Baugh to be guardian, 1655.
Ref: "Peter Jones & Richard Jones Genealogy," page 305, by Fothergill. Henrico County, VA., Records, Vol. 1, page 265:


Page 165: At a court held at Fort Henry 20 Sept. 1656, present: Major Abra Wood, Mr. Wm. Bough, Mr. Wm. Ward, Mr. Geo. Worsham, Commrs.

Page 327, June 3, 1662: Know all men by these presents that I, Richard Pace, with ye consent of my wife, Mary Pace, have bargained and sold unto Richard Taylor his heires executors adm. or assigns all and singular that parcel of land lying and being upon Powell Creek etc. Dated 13 March 1661. (Signed by Richard Pace and Mary Pace).

Ref: "Charles City Record Book 1655-1665," page 327: Richard Pace married Mary. This fact is proven by deed dated March 13, 1661, in which "my wife, Mary Pace" is mentioned.

1662 -- Ref: "Charles City County, VA Record Book, 1655-1665."

Know all, etc., that Richard Pace and wife, Mary, etc., deed to Richard Taylor land on Powell's Creek.

The records show a series of records in 1659 for Richard Pace. He inherited a good deal of property it would seem:

Feb. 3, 1659 Dispute over a cow between Richard Pace and John Drayton
Feb. 11, 1659 Deed to Wilkens, Wm. Wilkens
Feb. 25, 1659 Confirms George Pace's deed to Thomas Drew
Feb. 28, 1659 Deed to Thomas Madder

Mr. Beverly Fleet, in his Abstracts of the Records, given in the Charles City County Order Book ofr 1655-1665, which is the only record preserved in that County, has fully described the activities of Richard Pace from 1659 on. Richard Pace evidently inherited the 1,700 acres and the 507 acres which George Pace had patented in 1650-1652, less the 800 or 900 acres that George Pace himself sold to Thomas Drewe. Fleet

-60-
gives deeds to account for the greater part of this the year Richard Pace became of age.


Deed February 28 1659/60, Richard Pace, planter, of Powell's Creek, in Virginia, sells Tho. Madder of "Flower de Hundred" 300 acres on Powell's Creek, beginning where Thos. Biggs left off and bounding out in the woods upon Thos. Biggs land and so the full breadth of 300 acres upon the sd Creek as I the sd Richard Pace doe hold it by patent. Signed Richard Pace. Wit: Thos. Biggs, John Daniell.

Mrs. Lucy Wabli Le Sueur of Arvonia, VA, went to the Virginia State Library in Richmond and copied abstracts from this only existing record book of Charles City County, VA, an Order Book 1655-1665. In a letter written October 2, 1941 she says:

"I am sending such data as I have copied from an abstract book of Charles City. Experts are working daily on the original book and for this reason it is very hard to get access to it when you go to the Library. Then it certainly takes an expert to decipher it."

"I labored over the deed on page 327 but could not make it out well enough to be of any use to you. However, the Librarian told me there would be another edition in abstracts from this book published the first of January."

"There were not any names of any children mentioned in this deed, only Richard Taylor to whom the deed was made, signed by Richard Pase and Mary Pase (X) her mark."

"I asked the Librarian if he could help me ascertain who Mary Pace was, before she married Richard Pace. He suggested that I look up all names of Freeman, Williams, Drayton and Taylor, which I am doing. There are Prince George records which may help when I get to them. I am perservering on"
the abstract records of this old book, and will let you hear from me when I find any data."

"The Librarian thinks when I run across any wills made later than the Charles City book, I may be able to find something definite."

Ref: "Charles City County, Court Orders," Abstracts by Beverley Fleet, page 99 (476):


Ref: "Virginia Colonial Abstracts," Vol. 10 by Fleet. Charles City County, Virginia, Court Orders June 1664, page 507:

Richard Baker, having proved in court by confession of Richard Pace and John Rosser that he hath fully paid the estate of the orphans late in his tuition, is released from bond for the sd orphans estates, and the court consequently discharged by the personall confession of the said orphans XXX (June 1664).

Ref: "Virginia Colonial Abstracts," by Fleet, page 27, Abstracts of Charles City County, Court Records, page 536:

Deed of gift 21 January 1654/5 Richard Baker given to Richard Pace a parcel of land lying on the other side of the bottoms on the west side of the aforesaid Baker's plantation containing one hundred and forty acres in breth from the aforesaid bottoms and so holding the same breth downe to the great swamp beginning upon the line of the aforesaid Baker's at the head of the aforesaid bottome. Signed Richard Baker. Wit. Wm. Harris, Patrick Jackson, Caesar Walpole.


Richard Pace witnesses paper with Caesar Walpole, Richard Baker, Patrick Jackson, on

Ref: "Colonial Abstracts of Virginia" by Fleet, compiled from Charles City County Court Records, Vol. 13, page 27 (page 533):

Deed of partition, 21 Jan. 1664/5. Richard Baker and Patrick Jackson divided land patented jointly. The division line "from the line of Craven agst the plantation of Mr. Cogan by Wm. Harris wch line is to run east till it meets with the swamp and then to include the said swamp and run till it come to the brig going ovr the sd swamp runn to the house of the sd Baker, wch til to be for evr the division without any let or hindrance trouble or molestacon. Jackson to have land to north of line nd run into Baker to the south." Signed Richard Pace. Recorded 7 February 1644/5. The foregoing deed was interlined acknowledged and consented to by Ann Baker, widd., April 3, 1665.

It is thought that Richard Baker was guardian to Richard Pace's younger brothers and sisters or perhaps of Richard Pace himself, replacing Wm. Baugh and owed the estate money and that is why he had given bond and paid Richard Pace the money in land. A mere tutor would not have had to give bond. I have no record of any returns made by William Baugh, but he did not die during Richard's minority.

Ref: Deed Book, Henrico County, VA, Vol. 1667-1692, page 28 (page 620), 2 xbus 1682. "Mr. Wm. Baugh aged 70 odd years deponeth that he paid Capt. Henry Isham on acct of Daniel Dehart, 1 hand of tobacco."

Ref: "Virginia Colonial Abstracts," Vol. 13, (page 512). Charles City County Court Records, Court Orders, Abstracts by Beverly Fleet:

It is ordered that 85 lb. tobacco be likewise levied for each horse or mare in this comm. according to Act. to defray the charge for killing wolves and paid as follows:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Wolves</th>
<th>Amount</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>James Jones</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>400</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thos. Burrows</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Reginald Jones</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>200</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

-63-
In the "List of Layne's Creek Tythables," Surry County, in Anno 1668, we find that Richard Pace (who had wife, Mary) owned land in that County. It is not believed that he ever resided in Surrey County. Destruction of the Charles City County records prevent its verification of any information as to what became of Richard (George 2, Richard 1) Pace after 1673.

There are numerous records of deeds given to the sons of Richard Pace in the period in which there are records of Prince George County (1713-28). It seems there is only one book in existence of this County, also the Federals destroyed the courthouse and church history books in the area in the War Between the States.

Mr. Clayton Torrence has compiled an Index of Virginia Wills and Administrations. He covered every county in Virginia. He states what records are in existence and what are missing. Of the counties in which the Pace's did live, he gives:

Charles City County (founded 1634), one volume of general records, 1655-1665, wills and inventories prior to 1769 missing, from 1769 complete.

Prince George (formed 1702 from Charles City) remaining volumes 1713-28 and 1787-92.

Surry (formed 1652 from James City, County) sequence in volumes to 1800, though some pages are almost illegible and one volume badly damaged.

Ref: "William & Mary Quarterly," Vol. 8 (1st series), page 163. "List of Lawne's Creek Titheables," taken by Mr. George Jordan. A list of tythables taken by me subscribed 10th June 1668. Among others, Fran Sorsby, Pace & sarv't 03.

Ordered that John Donnell, George Middleton and Richard Pace shall pay Wm. Short 300 lb. tobo each, according to the order recorded agst the sd Short by Thos. Tanner.

Same reference, 1662 - "Colonial Abstracts" by Fleet, page 1 (485). Court at Westover 3 Aug. 1664:

Order that Thos. Tomlinson keep a gun taken from an Indian by him. He gives bond with Richard Pace, security 1,000 tob. to produce the gun when (or if) cause it bee to request itt.


Ref: "Virginia Colonial Abstracts" Vol. 13, Abstracts from Charles City County, VA, Order Book by Fleet, page 93 (545) June 3, 1673. Receipt from Richard Pace, 2 cows, 2 iron pots and 1 chair table. Signed John (Vane or) Lane. Wit. John Drayton Jr., Peter A. Read, recorded by James Minge, Cl. Curt.

This is the last recorded instrument found in Charles City County regarding this Richard Pace. He was at that time 35 years old. He had been married 12 years. In 1702, Prince George County was formed from Charles City County and there are several recorded deeds and land grants in that county, naming a Richard Pace in the early 177's. This Richard Pace had several sons, viz: Richard Jr., George, James, John and Thomas.
SUMMARY OF THE PACE LINE
IN
CHARLES CITY COUNTY, VIRGINIA

GEORGE PACE AND SARAH MACOCK

George Pace (____d. 1654) son and heir of Richard and Isabella Pace must have been born about 1610, probably in England, because he received a grant of land in 1628. This property had been his father’s patent, "Pace’s Paines" and was being held in trust by William Perry, step-father to George during his minority. This is the last record we have, in James City, Virginia, of George Pace.

When Isabella Pace, widow of Richard, moved from James City to Charles City, with Capt. Perry her second husband, about 1632. It is believed that George Pace went along with them. Pace’s Paines was sold to Thomas Swann in 1635.

The family settled on "Buckland" plantation, adjoining that of Capt. George Menefee and there George Pace met Sarah Maycock who was living in the home of Menefee. They were married in 1637 and their first child, Richard, was born in 1638.

On August 1, 1650, George Pace patented 1,700 acres of land on the south side of the James River in Charles City County commonly called "Matocks" for the transfer of 34 persons. He sold 800 or 900 acres of this land to Thomas Drew, October 12, 1650. This sale was confirmed by his son, Richard, when he became of age in 1659, thus making it legal.

George Pace, on December 6, 1652, received a grant of 507 acres on the south side of James River and east side of Powell’s Creek in Charles City County for the transfer of 10 persons.

He married Sarah Maycock, the daughter of Capt. Samuel Maycock of the Council, killed in the Massacre. Both George and Sarah Pace were dead by January 4, 1665, according to deposition of Richard, their son.

CAPT. SAMUEL MAYCOCK, MEMBER OF THE COUNCIL

Samuel Maycock (____d. 1622) was the son of Roger Macock of England. In 1617 he was asked to come to Virginia to take
charge of a parish, since there were so few ministers in the Colony. He was a Cambridge scholar.

In 1618, he came and patented land called "Mater Maicock's Divident" called later "Maycock's Plantation" and "Maycox". He evidently married in Virginia but there is no record of the name of his wife.

In 1619, he was made a member of the Council of Estate, and served as such until his death. His name is carved upon the monument erected to the Memory of the Delegates to the First House of Burgesses, along with the other Members of the Council.

Virginia Highway Historic Roadway markers point out his plantation for the benefit of tourists. Late in 1620 or early in 1622, a daughter was born to Mr. & Mrs. Samuel Maycock called Sarah. Capt. (and Mrs.) Maycock were killed by the Indians in the Massacre on March 22, 1622. Nothing is known as to what happened to Mrs. Maycock.

SUMMARY OF SARA MACOCK

Sara Macock (b. 1622, d. 1654), only child of Capt. & Mrs. Samuel Maycock of Charles City, Virginia, was left fatherless by the Massacre of 1622 and was taken into the home of Capt. Roger Smith. During his lifetime, Sara lived in James City near Jamestown. After the death of Capt. Roger Smith, his widow married Capt. George Menefee and moved to "Buckland" in Charles City County where she lived on an adjoining plantation to Capt. William Perry and family.

Mrs. Menefee brought Sara Macock with her and George Pace met. In 1637, George Pace and Sara Macock were married. In 1626, Sara was granted 200 acres of land on account of four servants her father had brought over, but no record is available to show whether she ever lived on the land. Their first child was born in 1638.
SUMMARY OF THE PACE LINE OF CHARLES CITY COUNTY, VIRGINIA

RICHARD PACE\(^3\), GEORGE\(^2\), RICHARD\(^1\), MARY KNOWLES

Richard Pace\(^3\) (1639 d.\_) eldest son of George and Sarah (Macock) Pace, was born in 1638 in Charles City County, VA. He applied for a guardian in January 1655, stating he was a minor, and that both his parents were dead. The petition was granted and Mr. William Baugh was appointed to be his guardian.

He became of age early in 1659. He confirmed the sale which his father made to Thomas Drewe, 1650, just as soon as he reached his majority. There are numerous deeds of record made in Charles City County by Richard Pace between 1659 and 1673.

He sold land to William Wilkins, to Thomas Madder and to Richard Taylor. He was often in the records with John Drayton and James Ward. We have no proof that Richard sold "Maycock" to Roger Drayton, but Roger Drayton owned it in 1696.

Richard Pace married Mary Knowles, daughter of John Knowles and Mary Broadnax in 1661. This is verified by the deed made by Richard and "wife Mary" to Richard Taylor, June 1661.

On May 19, 1659, Richard Pace made a deposition stating that George and Sarah Maycocke were his parents, that he was the oldest son and heir and that they were both dead. He witnessed deeds in 1662 and in 1664.

In June 1664, Richard Baker stated that he had fully paid the estate of Richard Pace and asked to be released from bond, as Richard had been under his tuition. Richard Baker gave to Richard Pace land in 1664/5. The last record we fine of Richard Pace was in 1673, he paid tythes in Surry County in 1668, but did not live there.

-68-
THE BROADNAX FAMILY

Ref: "William and Mary Quarterly Magazine," Vol. 14, pages 52-58. Among the families of County, Kent in England, the Broadnaxes held a respected position. The following pedigree is taken from Berry's Kentish Genealogies:

Robert Broadnax lived temp. Henry I, married Alice Scoppe and had Robert II of Hyde (Hythe) who died in 1487.

Robert II Broadnax of Hyde (Robert¹) married Julian and had issue: John, Cecelia, Margaret (md. John Horne).

John III Broadnax (Robert², Robert¹) married Margaret and had issue: William of Bermuda, Winnefred, Joan and Martha.

William Broadnax (John³, Robert², Robert¹) married Agnes and died in 1527. They had issue: Robert of Chariton, married Joan Knight and had 14 children. Thomas of Godmersham married Joan Wilmym.

Thomas Broadnax of Godmersham (William⁴, John³, Robert², Robert¹) married Gilbert and had John, married Rebecca Leeds. He married secondly, Julian Brockman (sister to Sir John Brockman of Beachborough) and had: Henry, Thomas, William, Margaret, Mildred, Joan, Anne, Jane, Susan, Sarah (married Wm. Curteis).

Thomas Broadnax of Godmersham, Esq., died 1658. He first married Katherine, daughter and co-heir of John Southland, of New Romney. Married secondly Elizabeth, daughter of John Taylor of Welsborough and had:

1. Thomas
2. William
3. Henry
4. Robert (b. 1615, d. 1673) md Elizabeth Curteis
5. Elizabeth, md Daniel White of Winchelsea
6. John, married Dorothy
7. Mary, married John Knowles
8. Martha, married William Wootten
9. Susan


Record that Mr. John Knowles of this County formerly of James City, made a deed, etc. William Fisher, Cl., Coveton (Henrico).


The first record of John Knowles as being in Virginia is obtained from "The Seventeenth Century Isle of Wight County, VA." by Boddie, page 571:

The Hausemond County records were destroyed by fire about 1888, so there is no information obtainable about the Puritans of that county.

There was apparently a scarcity of ministers in this new settlement, for in 1642, Phillip Bennett, made a voyage to Boston to secure some ministers. He carried letters to the Elders of Boston "in which the writers bewailed their sad condition for the want of the means of salvation.

The letters were from Upper Norfolk (later Nansemond) and were signed by Richard Bennett, John Hill, Daniel Gookin and sixty-nine others.

The New England account of this voyage was that "about the year 1642, the Lord was pleased to put it into the hearts of some goodly people in Virginia to send to New England for some of the ministers of Christ to be helpful unto them in instructing them in the truth as it is in Jesus."

The godly Mr. Phillip Bennett coming hither, made our move. Elders appointed for full time who were very young and to them were appointed for enlarging the kingdom. Knowles of Watertown and Mr. Compton were next unto them who survived
in safety preached for a good space of time and went from house to house exhorting the people that with full purpose of heart they come unto the Lord. The harvest they had was plentiful for the little space of time they were there, till being opposed by the Governors and some other malignant spirits, they were forced to return to New England.

The ministers referred to were the Reverend William Thompson, a graduate of Oxford, and the Reverend John Knowles, a graduate of Immanuel College, Cambridge.

The Virginia House of Burgesses made it so unpleasant that the ministers went back to New England. However, John Knowles returned to Virginia years later and settled in Henrico, adjoining county to Charles City. He died in Henrico County in 1677. His daughter, Mary, married Richard Pace.

In 1642, Rev. John Knowles was sent to Virginia to preach to the people of Isle of Wight County. It was not received very well by the authorities, so the ministers returned to Massachusetts. Years later John Knowles came again to Virginia and bought land in Jamestown. He moved to Henrico County where he lived on an adjoining plantation to Richard Ward.


John Knowles married Mary, (daughter of Thomas Broadnax and his 2nd wife, Elizabeth Taylor). Their daughter, Mary Knowles married Richard Pace. Another daughter, Elizabeth Broadnax, had married Daniel White. Thomas Pace, (son of Richard and Mary Knowles Pace) married 2nd Jane, (widow of one Daniel White).
Destruction of the Charles City County records keep us from learning the date of the death of Richard Pace, or of Mary (Knowles) Pace. They are known to have had eight children: George, Thomas, Richard, John, James, Elizabeth, Ann and Sarah.

CHILDREN OF RICHARD AND MARY (Knowles) PACE

Each of these received land in Prince George County between 1715 and 1724. The children of Richard Pace and wife, Mary, (so far as is known) are as follows, there may have been others:

Richard Pace Jr., married Rebecca, took out land grants in Surry County, Virginia, 1718 and in 1724, moved to North Carolina. Died in Bertie County in 1738.

George Pace, named in Rent Roll of 1704 in Prince George County. Named in a deed to John West in 1715.

James Pace, named in a deed from William Epps in 1715. James Pace married Sarah, daughter of William Eppes and wife, Sara, daughter of Caesar Walpole.

Thomas Pace named as a witness in a deed between Thomas Ravenscroft, William Hamlin and William Eppes in 1724.

John Pace married Elizabeth Newsome, moved to Middlesex County, Virginia.

Elizabeth Pace married 2nd John Hamlin who bought "Maycox" from Roger Drayton in 1696. She married first, Thomas Rosencroft Sr.

Two other daughters, Ann and Sarah.

The Virginia Rent Rolls of 1704 refer to George Pace. Ref: "Virginia Magazine," Vol. 28, page 335. A rent roll of all the lands held in the County of Prince George for the year 1704, George Pace, 246 acres, Prince George County.

Ref: "Prince George County, VA Deeds 1713-1728", Part I, 1715:

-72-
Deed between George Pace of Prince George County, planter, and John West of same county, carpenter, 100 acres in Parish of Bristoll on line of John Ellis. In the seven and twentieth year of reign of King Henry the Eighth for the transferring of March 1715. Wit. Robert Munford, Thomas Simmons, William Hamlin, and signed by George (G. P.) Pace (his mark).

Ref: "Prince George County, Virginia, Deeds 1713-18," Part I, page 269:

Richard Pace from Francis Poythress the elder, 1718, deed. Fra Poythress Sr., deed to Pace (Richard) of Co. of Prince George...all land whereon said Richard was liveth. Plantation of Jos. Carter. Ed. Crossland, Thos. Kirkland and Michael Prosser Sr., 400 acres, 1718.

Deed from Francis Poythress and Richard Pace of Prince George and Thomas Godwin of Surry land in Parish of Westover.

George Pace belonged in Bristol Parish, Richard and James belonged in Westover Parish.


Ref: Virginia Magazine," Vol. 33, page 32. In Surry, Dec. 11, 1721, is a deed from Burwell Green and wife, Ann, and Francis Poythress, all of Surry, to Robert Hunnicutt, conveying 200 acres in Prince George County, part of a patent by Rebecca Poythress, April 29, 1692. One half of said land being in possession of Littlebury Eppes and 300 acres, part of said land given to Rebecca Poythress, daughter of said Rebecca and the other 200 to said Ann.

The Poythress family was closely connected with Roger Drayton. The emigrant, Francis Poythress I, came to Virginia in 1636. The arms are on the tomb in Blandford Churchyard, Petersburg, Virginia. Francis Poythress had a grant of 400 acres in Charles City, 1637.

-73-
Roger Drayton died about 1715, leaving minor children. Peter and Francis Poythress were guardians of his children. Roger Drayton sold "Maycox" in 1696 to John Hamlin.

Ref: "Hayden's Virginia Genealogies," page 518:

In 1692, Thomas Pace of Virginia, planter and wife, Jane of Rappahannock County and Rowland Thornton, planter, and wife, Elizabeth (one of the daughters of Alex Fleming, deceased) made deed to Francis Thornton of Richmond County, of 320 acres of land, being part of 960 acres given by Fleming to his wife, Joyce and two daughters which 320 acres came to Pace with Alexia, his former wife.

Ref: In Rappahannock Records, Essex (could this be Essex?) County, Virginia, Alex Fleming and wife, Ursula, made a deed recorded in Rappahannock County, August 19, 1660. Capt. Fleming was married twice. His first wife was Ursula and his second wife was Joyce. So far as is known he had only two daughters, Alexia (who married Thomas Pace) and Elizabeth (who married Rowland Thornton).

In 1692, Thomas Pace had married a second time to Jane, and was living in Rappahannock, now Essex County.


In Essex County, Virginia, there is recorded a deed 30 June 1683, William Chapman and wife Mary to Thomas Pace and wife, Alexia, of Rappahannock County, VA (old county since cut up, the records are in Essex) to 320 acres " as also her equitable part of patent of 2,750 acres on south side, as by patent dated April 1667, all now in possession of Thomas Pace bought from Pace and wife, Alexia, by indenture of 4 June 1683." Ref: Rappahannock Co., Deeds 7, page 63.

Ref: "Colonial Records of Richmond County," by Fleet, Vol. 16, page 6. 1663...mentions Thomas Pace, Alexia his wife, Jean his daughter.
In 1699, we find Thomas Pace in Rappahannock County (now Essex) witnessing the will of Martin Fisher Sr., in Richmond County. The original old Rappahannock was formed in 1656, became extinct in 1692; records complete, in Essex County. Richmond County was carved from Old Rappahannock in 1692, Essex was formed in 1691.


Thomas Pace moved from Charles City County to Rappahannock when he married Alexia Fleming, to settle on and to take possession of the land which she inherited there.

Elizabeth Pace, daughter of Richard III and Mary Pace, married first Thomas Ravenscroft, second John Hamlin.

Mr. Webster of Texas, is a Quarles descendent and he gives some interesting data that related to the Hamlin family and shows connection to Pace and to Drayton. He says that Elizabeth Pace married John Hamlin Sr., she first married Thomas Ravenscroft, he says.

John Hamlin, Sr., son of Stephen Hamlin Jr., and Mary Elain was Captain of the Colonial Virginia Militia in 1680 and a member of the House of Burgesses in 1714, 1720 and 1722, from Prince George County. He married Elizabeth Pace, whose will was proved in Prince George County, May 23, 1720 and names son William, grandson Thomas, daughters Elizabeth, Lucy and Hannah.

There were other children, seven in all. Issue of John Hamlin Sr., and wife, Elizabeth Hamlin:

1. William, who was Clerk of Prince George County in 1714.
2. John Jr., who inherited "Maycox" plantation from his father, John Hamlin Sr. (who bought it from Roger Drayton 1676).
3. Richard, who married Anne Harrison, daughter of Thomas Harrison and wife, Eleanor. (On July 12, 1715, "on petition of Thomas Harrison his bond for the case, etc.....option of the orphans of Roger Drayton, deceased, is released, etc....").
4. Lucy
5. Elizabeth
6. Hannah, married a Mr. Wilcox
7. Thomas Ravenscroft


John Hamlin Sr., bought "Maycox" in 1696 from Roger Drayton. He gave it in 1723 to his son, John Hamlin Jr. In the Hamlin data we have this notation:

Micajah Lowe, late of Charles City County and Surry, will 1702, leaves a ring to each to my mother-in-law, Elizabeth Hamlin, his sister Susanah Lowe, Johannah Jarrett, and Mary Lowe, and to my uncle Micajah Perry.

The Pace, Cocke, Eppes, Hamlin, Ravenscroft, Lowe and Drayton families were very closely associated. A letter from Mr. Fred S. Webster, 2514 Pearl Street, Austin, Texas, written Feb. 2, 1936 contains some Hamlin-Pace data that suggests a possible solution of the reason why Roger Drayton owned "Maycox" plantation. He says, "My Hamlin chart shows that John Hamlin bought "Maycock" plantation of Roger Drayton in 1696. No wife is shown for John Hamlin and all this is of extreme interest to me for my Pace chart shows "Maycock's Plantation" sold 1696 and it just about proves to me that Elizabeth Hamlin was the wife of John and that she was a Miss Pace. Evidence is that she married first, a Ravenscroft and second to John Hamlin."

Capt. John Ravenscroft secured a pass to go to Virginia in 1651.

Ref: "Virginia Magazine," Vol 3, page 398:

In an old book remaining of Prince George County there is a deed dated Nov. 7, 1715 from William Eppes and his wife, Sarah, of Westover Parish, Prince George County, conveying ____ acres, which was a part of a tract formerly belonging to Caesar Walpole, and by his will gives to his children, Richard and Sarah Walpole, the latter the wife of William Eppes.....to James Pace....
Ref: Prince George County, VA, Deeds 1713-28, Part I, 1715...James Pace to William Eppes, ban and release bond. 1715...William Eppes....William Eppes deed of ....to James Pace of County of Prince George and Westover Parish, 1715. (Sarah, daughter of William Eppes, married James Pace).


Ref: "Virginia Magazine," Vol. 15, page 377:

At a Council held at Capitol 4 May 1742, John Hamlin for Maycocks, Prince George County. John Hamlin IV (John^3, Stephen^2, Stephen^1) sold in 1723, his plantation called "Maycocks" of 250 acres on James River, which was acquired by Capt. John Hamlin, his father, from Roger Drayton, Dec. 13, 1696.


Ref: "Tyler's Quarterly Historical and Genealogical Magazine," Vol. VIII, page 273:

Caesar Walpole died before 1715, leaving issue (1) Richard, (2) Sarah who married Wm. Eppes. Caesar Walpole died before 1704, for his name does not appear among the owners of land in either county in the Quit Rent Rolls.

Ref: "Virginia Magazine," Vol. 3, page 398:

In an old book remaining of Prince George County, there is a deed dated Nov. 7, 1715 from Wm. Eppes and his wife Sarah, of Westover Parish, Prince George County conveying acres, which was part of a tract formerly belonging to Caesar Walpole and by his will given to his children, Richard and Sarah Walpole, the latter the wife of William Eppes.

There is a very close connection between the Pace and Eppes families, both in Virginia and North Carolina. In 1715, in Prince George County, VA, Wm. Eppes gave a deed to James and Sarah Pace. Sarah is said to have been a daughter of Wm. Eppes.
Deed August 11, 1724, from Thomas Ravenscroft of James City County to William Hamlin of his share of land patented by Thomas Ravenscroft, William Hamlin and William Eppes was witnesses by Thomas Pace.

The Virginia family of Eppes, Epps, Eps, bears the Arms of the Kentish family of the name of Francisco Eppes, the emigrant, has not yet been found in the wills examined.

Ref: "Tidewater Virginia," by Paul Wilstach, page 142:

A few miles beyond Jordan's Point, the next projection of land round which the river bends, after passing Westover and Berkeley, the south bank of the James, opens for the entry of the Appomattox River. It is tidal only 12 miles toward the little but venerable City of Petersburg. On the east bank where it angles on the James is City Point...once, and from the early days of the Colony, called Eppes Point.

Here in 1635 had come Francis Eppes, a member of His Majesty's Council and he gave his name to the Point and to the Island just across the James and here he built the first house on the highest land back of the point. It was torn down after standing more than a century and its timbers were used in building, in part, at least, the present house put here in 1751. The estate is called "Appomattox" and it has been the home of the Eppes family continually for nearly three hundred years, a record for Virginia and probably for America as well.

It may be stated upon the authority of Dr. Phillip Slaughter that the several families of Epps, Epes, and Eppes of the Counties of Prince George, Nottoway and Chesterfield are descended from Francis Eppes who settled at City Point, Prince George County while it was a part of Charles City County, during or prior to the year 1635.

The immigrant, Lieutenant Colonel Francis Eppes was the father of Lieut. Col. Francis Eppes II (1628-1678) who married Elizabeth Littlebury and had Littlebury Eppes of Charles City County, Justice in 1699; Burgess 1710, 1714, died 1746 and others.


-78-
Roll of all the lands held of her Majestie in Charles City County 1704:

Epes, Littlebury 400 acres (on this roll)
Epes, John 500 acres " " "

Lieut. Col. John Eppes II, Charles City, was alive in 1667, patented 2,750 acres in 1667, had issue: William and Richard. William Eppes married the daughter to Caesar Walpole.


There has been published a Parish Register of Middlesex, Christ Church Parish, and there are many Pace entries in it, but there is no connection shown for most of them with each other. John Pace and wife, Elizabeth, had a daughter, Sarah baptized 1694, and a son George, baptized 1715. Elizabeth was Elizabeth Newsome.


A family of Newsum or Newsom was long resident in Surry and the adjoining counties. The will of William Newsom, a son of the patentee, was dated June 10 and proved in Surry, Sept. 1st, 1691. He gave to his son, William, the plantation land in Rich Neck and directed that it should never be sold. To son, John, the plantation lot of William Harris where the testator then lived; son, Robert and Thomas the lands called "Hopewell", to son Robert one negro, to son Thomas one negro, to daughter a negro and a horse; to daughter Ann a negro. Rest of the estate between wife and children, sons William and Robert and John and wife, Ann. Executor friend Francis Mason and Robert, overseers.

Ref: "Virginia Magazine," Vol. 4, page 429

William Nusum, 550 acres in the County of James City toward Sunken Marsh, due 50 acres for own personal adventure, 50 acres for the personal adventure of first wife, Mary Ramsey, 50 acres for personal adventure of the second wife, Sarah Fisher, 50 acres for personal adventure of his
now wife, Elizabeth Wilson, and 350 acres for
transfer of 7 persons. Granted by West, May 3,
1636. Patent renewed August 26, 1643 by Sir.
William Berkeley.

We probably shall never know if Richard Pace I had other
children than George, however, we do know that Richard III
(\textsuperscript{2}George, \textsuperscript{1}Richard) had six (6) children viz:

1. Richard Jr., married Rebecca Poythress
2. John married Elizabeth Newsome
3. Thomas married 1st Alexia Fleming, 2nd, Jane___
4. James married Sarah Eppes
5. Elizabeth married John Hamlin
6. George, no record

John Pace is named in the Rent roll of 1704 in Middlesex
County, Virginia. Of these six children of Richard III and
Mary (Knowles) Pace, only one of these left Virginia. George
lived in Prince George County, John moved to Middlesex Co.,
Thomas moved to Old Rappahannock (now Essex), James stayed in
Prince George County, Elizabeth lived in Charles City County
and Richard Jr. moved first to Surry County and then to North
Carolina.

We know that the family of Richard III and Mary (Knowles)
Pace must have been grown and living upon grants of land
of their own in 1696 when Roger Drayton sold "Maycock" to
John Hamlin. We would not expect any of them to be of age
until 1683 or 1684.

We know that James Pace and Sarah (Eppes) Pace had several
children to locate in North Carolina. They had issue, four
(4) sons and probably others:

1. George Pace married Obedience__, died
   Edgecombe County, North Carolina 1742
2. William Pace married Mary Evans. Died 1746,
   Edgecombe Co., N. C.
3. John Pace, married Elizabeth Lowe, died Bertie
   County, N. C., 1727
4. James Pace Jr., moved to North Carolina 1719

Ref: "Abstracts of Virginia Land Patents," prepared by
W. G. Stannard. "Virginia Historical Magazine," Vol. 1,
page 82:

There are abstracts of the records of the
original land patents in the Office of the
Register of Land, office in the City of

-80-
Richmond. These records of patents began in the year 1623, that is, seventeen years after the foundation of the first permanent English settlement in America at Jamestown, and only a few years after the right of holding private property in the soil of Virginia, conferred upon societies and individuals.

During the time the affairs of the Colony were in the hands of the Company, namely, between 1606 and 1625, in which latter year the charter was revoked, the conditions of a grant was either meritorious service of some kind, or the emigration of the patentee to Virginia in person, or the transportation to the Colony of some one at his own expense, or the purchase of a share in the Company.

The value of the meritorious service was estimated by the colonial authorities and such an area of land allowed as was considered proportionate to it. The purchase of a share gave a right to 100 acres of land, which was increased to 200 when the first trust had been seated. Whoever paid the charge for transporting into the Colony a person, whether his own servant, or a member of his family, or anyone else, was entitled to 50 acres of land, and this was the usual means of obtaining a patent.

After dissolution of the Company, the acquisition of title by meritorious service played a small part in the history of Virginia patents. Headright, as it was called, that is the right to 50 acres for every individual brought in by the patentee; because the principal basis of title continued until the patentee became possessed of the right to purchase the public lands with money which was established in the early part of the 18th century. Throughout the Colonial period, however, the headright remained in force.

Ref: "Tidewater Virginia," by Wilstad, page 68:

Title to the land was vested by grant from the Sovereign in the London Company. Acting
as its regents, the Governor and Council in Virginia conveyed title to the settlers. Each shareholder in the Company was entitled to 100 acres from which arose on the James that sometimes remaining place name of "hundred".

Only one third of the shareholders actually went out to Tidewater. The others sold their shares into England, or sent their agents out to sell their shares for them in Virginia. Soon, a grant of 100 acres was made to every planter who at his own cost came to the Colony. The most important means of land acquisition was the headright. Everyone who transported an immigrant over sea to the new Colony was given 50 acres.

Thus, we know definitely that the Pace immigrant, who was Richard Pace I, settled within the limits of the present Surry County, at a place called "Pace's Paines" in James City on the south side of the James River and four miles above Jamestown. James City was an original shire. Right here England established her first permanent settlement and gained a foothold in the Western hemisphere.

From this section and from Charles City County (joining James City) and within the present limits of Prince George County, we can trace the Pace family into North Carolina.

Richard Pace I, the immigrant, lived and died in James City. His wife and his son, George, still living in the County in 1628. She married again and her son, George, supposedly moved to Charles City with his mother and his step-father about 1632. "Pace's Paines" was sold in 1635. In 1637, her second husband died. No record has been found as to what became of Isabella.

Now, a Capt. Samuel Macock had lived in Charles City County and was killed in the Massacre of 1622. He had left a small daughter, Sarah, who was adopted into the home of Capt. Roger Smith. Roger Smith's widow married Capt. Menefee, moved to Charles City and brought Sarah Macock with her. The Menefee's and George Pace lived on adjoining plantations, and George Pace and Sarah Macock married in 1637. The continued to live in Charles City and both George Pace and wife, Sarah Macock Pace, died in that county before January 1655.

-82-
We shall probably never know whether Richard I and Isabella Pace had other children than George, or if George and Sarah Macock Pace left any record of other children than Richard. The County records of James City are entirely destroyed. Nearly all of the Charles City and Prince George County records are gone, only records of land grants are available except from 1655 to 1665 which is only an Order Book of the Minutes of the Inferior Court. It is going to take a careful search of unpublished records to get it if it is to be had.

Before the Revolution, the old law of Primogeniture was in force, and unless there was a will, all the property went to the eldest son to the exclusion of all other children. For that reason, we shall never know if Richard Pace I had other children than George or the names of all of George's children, but his son, Richard, speaks for himself as being, "the first issue of my mother: as if there were other and younger children than himself. We do not know that Sarah Maycock was an only child.

Richard Pace III (son of George Pace²) eldest son and heir was living at the plantation "Matcocks" on Powell's Creek in Charles City (now Prince George) Virginia in 1659, when he became of age. He married Mary Knowles either in Charles City or Henrico County about 1661 or 1662 and they continued to live in Charles City. At least he was there in 1673.

Richard Pace of "Macox" Charles City County, had at least six children. Knowing that he was not married before 1661, we can easily check up the various Pace members to find in deeds, wills, etc., in Prince George County at that period. We would not expect any of his children to be age before 1683 or 1684.

The family of Richard and Mary Pace must have been grown and living upon grants of land of their own. At the time Roger Drayton sold "Maycox" in 1696, we do not know how or when he obtained title to the property.

In 1702, Prince George County was carved out of Charles City, we find Paces in that county from the time of formation. The records of Prince George are nearly all destroyed, the first record available is from 1713-1728. The Rent Rolls of 1704 for that county are in existence. Richard Pace III (George², Richard¹) was 64 years old when the new county, Prince George, was formed.

One of the six known children of Richard and Mary Pace, viz: George, James, John, Thomas, Richard Jr., and Elizabeth,
only one, Richard Jr., moved out of Virginia. But there were several of his grandchildren who went into North Carolina.

James had four sons to come into North Carolina before 1720. Richard Jr., had two sons to migrate to that state. From North Carolina these grandchildren branched out, locating in Georgia and Tennessee, and finally scattering to far parts of the country. They have been located, that is, descendents of them, as far west as Texas and California. One branch went from Georgia direct to Mississippi. See sketch of this branch.

North Carolina received its first permanent settlers from Virginia. The soil, the climate, the vegetation and animal life of the Albemarle region are the same character as those of southeastern Virginia.

Nothing was more natural than that the planters of Virginia, searching for good bottom land should gradually extend their plantations southward along the shores of Albemarle Sound and the rivers that flow into it.

The Virginians early manifested a lively interest in the Albemarle region. Just when the southward movement of settlers began can not be stated with accuracy. From Albemarle the population moved slowly southward. The stages of its progress may be marked by the four principal river systems of eastern Carolina— the Roanoke, the Pamlico (Tar), the Neuse, and the Cape Fear.

The Capt Fear region was cleared of Indians and pirates by the year 1718, and about the year 1723, enterprising men familiar with the advantages of the region began to lay out their claims, clear their fields and build their cabins.

Considerable population had come from Virginia and settled in the Albemarle by 1663. The earliest recorded legislation was effected in 1669. Edenton was the focal point of civilization for North Carolina, and the history of St. Paul’s Parish is the history of the early struggling colony. As early as 1658, there was considerable development round this point, bearing the name of Chowan Precinct.

The planters of Virginia gradually extended their plantations southward along the shores of Albemarle Sound and the rivers that flow into it. After the old precincts at Albemarle were well occupied, these immigrants from the adjoining provinces possessed themselves of Bertie and there the population became so numerous that in 1741, Northampton had to be erected.
Bertie Precinct was formed in 1722, not as one of the original precincts, but out of the territory belonging to Chowan Precinct. It was known as Bertie Precinct, in Albemarle County. The area now included in the state's boundaries was first permanently settled by white men about 1650, and was a part of the "proprietary of Carolina" granted to Charles II of England in 1663, to eight proprietors. These men proposed at first to create eight "counties palatine" but they actually established only three, Albemarle, Clarenden and Craven.

Albemarle County, the region around Albemarle Sound, for a time included the entire settled portion of North Carolina. The precinct was a political unit since it was entitled to representation in the Assembly. In reality, the precinct was the equivalent to the modern County, and in 1738, the fourteen precincts then existing were officially designated Counties, while the larger divisions were abolished.

Albemarle was one of the original "counties palatine" created by the proprietors of Carolina and no definite date can be given for its establishment. Bath and Clarendon, the other two "counties palatine" within the present limits of North Carolina never had any active existence as governmental units but as Albemarle County during the earliest years of the Colony was coterminous with the settled area of the province, its government became the provincial government.

Prior to 1700, the Governor and Assembly of what was to be North Carolina, were usually referred to as the "Governor and Assembly of Albemarle." Chowan, Currituck, Pasquotouk and Perquimans were established in 1670, as the units of local government within the County of Albemarle.

With the expansion of the settled area of the Colony after 1700, the provincial government grew beyond the limits of Albemarle County, and the latter became essentially no more than a geographical area like the other counties palatine.

In 1738, all the counties palatine were abolished and the "precincts" became "counties" in law, as they had been from the beginning, in fact.

Chowan was formed 1670 as a precinct of Albemarle County.

Bertie County formed 1722 as a precinct of Chowan County.

Edgecombe was formed in 1735 from Bertie.
After the old precincts at Albemarle were well occupied, these immigrants from adjoining provinces possessed themselves of Bertie and there the population became so numeros that in 1741, the new County of Northampton had to be erected.

Five years later the first settlement that the Virginians had made on the Tar had so expanded that Edgecombe had to be divided, and Granville was portioned off on the western frontier which in like manner Johnston County (first proposed to be named Essex) was formed from the western part of Craven, extending up the course of the Neuse.

In 1748, the first settlement that the Virginians had made on the Tar had so expanded that Edgecombe had to be divided, and Granville was portioned off on the western frontier, while Johnston County was formed from the western part of Craven, extending up the course of the Neuse.

Granville was formed from Edgecombe, 1746.

Wake County, formed 1771 from Cumberland, Johnston and Orange Counties.

The first Pace who is mentioned in North Carolina is in 1704 when Richard Pace Jr., took out a land grant. He did not come to North Carolina, but allowed the property to escheat for want of becoming settled!

In 1719, however, other Paces were granted land in North Carolina. In 1713, John Pace took up land, moved there and died in Bertie, 1727.

In 1719, James Pace Jr., was granted 630 acres in Chowan, moved to North Carolina and lived there the rest of his life. He sold this land and patented 450 acres in Edgecombe in 1744. He also sold this land. We find George Pace and William Pace in Edgecombe in 1746. The children of James Pace Sr. and wife, Sarah (Eppes) Pace who came to North Carolina -- (not listed here).

Ref: "Index to Lords Prietor's Grants" filed in Secretary of State's Office, Raleigh, N. C.:

Pace, George, south side Moratock River, Bertie Precinct, File #987, recorded Book 11-A-1717.

Pace, George, south side Moratock River, Bertie Precinct, File #988, recorded Book 111-A-1727.
Pace, George, south side Morattock River, Bertie Precinct, File #989, Book 111-A-1727.

ABSTRACT OF GRANTS: File 987: On south side Morattock River, beginning at a Gum, Nicholas Smith's Corner tree, then along his line No. 80 west 160 poles to a black oak then south westy 10 252 poles to a Spanish oak then south 80 east 320 to a white oak in Elk Marsh Swamp then up the swamp to the first station. Dated 1st Dec. 1727. File #988, beginning at a pine in Elk Marsh, Nicholas Smith's corner tree and c. in Elk Marsh. Tile #989, Wm. Low's corner tree--up the Marsh Swamp, dated 1 Dec. 1727.

These patents were for 140 acres, 185 acres and 360 acres. Marattock is the old name in North Carolina of the Roanoke River. George Pace died in Edgecombe County, N.C. in 1742.

Ref: Edgecombe County, N.C., Inventories, Accounts and Sales of Estate (C. R. 37.0025.):

Years 1733-1772, Page 21, Article 83, Year 1742.
Divided estate of George Pace, deceased, between his widow and children:

Widow Pace (Obedience)
William Pace
Lucretia Pace
James Pace
Mary Pace

Money in Virginia Currenty to:
Mr. William Pace, son
Mrs. Obedience Pace, widow

Memorandum of Land Grants, Land Grant Office, N.C., George Pace, Edgecombe County. Issued 8/4/1741, 100 acres. Issued for location on E. side Elk Marsh, Book No. 4, Page 143, Index No. 185.

Ref: Colonial Records, Raleigh, N. C. (37.025) Edgecombe, Pace's Inventory of things got into my possession since the last given:

To one old bed and bolster and rugg, two potts, one gun, two chests, one pail, three dishes, two basons, two porrigers, one chare, two axes, two bedsteads, two bedcords, two tubs, two tuipans, seven head of cattle, six head of hogs, one horse. May 28, 1748. S/ John Carlewe.
Edgecombe County, J.P., May Court 1748. The above Inventory was exhibited on oath by John Carlow, Exr and c., and was ordered to be recorded. Test. Benjamin Wynns.

Acct. Sales of Wm. Pace, Deceased, VA money:
1 dish sold to Benj. Blake 3-4
1 dish sold to John Jones 4-
1 gun sold to Benj. Blake 5-9
1 candlestick to Wm. Jones 9 eta.

July 5th, 1748, Edgecombe County August Court 1748, Trdy. Benj. Wynns.


Ref: Edgecombe County, N. C., Records, years 1733-1772. Inventories, Accts. and Sales of Estate. June 1745. Sales of Estate of John Pope, Dec'd, sold June 1745 to Wm. Pace.

March 20, 1746. Sold from Estate of Benjamin Evans, Dec'd., to William Pace, Benj. Saxon and Jamuel Saxon. April 11, 1749, May Court, 1750. Division of Estate of Benj. Evans:

To widow
To Ann Cotton
To Mary Pace
To Henry Evans

To Hannah Evans
To Rebecca Evans
To Faith Evans


Edgecombe was created from Bertie; Granville from Edgecombe. Wake from Orange, Johnston and Cumberland.

George Pace and his brother, William Pace, sold part of their land as per the following:

George Pace of Prect. of Edgecombe Co., Albemarle Province of N.C., 1735, signed by Sam Williams and Thomas Colsoe.

William Pace of County of Parish of Edgecombe, to Moses Smith, 1746, 100 acres of land, signed
John Pace (son of James & Sarah (Eppes) Pace.

John Pace was the first one of the sons of James and Sarah (Eppes) Pace to move into North Carolina. He came to Albemarle County in 1713 and located in Chowan Precinct. He died in Bertie Precinct in 1727. His wife was Elizabeth Lowe, whom he married before he left Prince George County, Virginia.

Ref: Land Grant Office, File #188--John Pace, east side Marattock River above Connachy, 1st April 1713. (Note, as before stated, Marattock was Roanoke).


Ref: Memorandum of Land Grants, on file in Land Grant Office, Raleigh, N.C. John Pace (county not given) 300 acres, issued April 1, 1713. Index #188, Page 213, Book #1, Location E. side Marattock.

So far as is known, John Pace, son of James Sr., and Richard (his uncle, son of Richard and Mary) are the earliest Paces of this family to immigrate to North Carolina. No doubt these two, John and Richard Jr., full of the spirit of adventure, decided to cast their lot in the new territory that was constantly being explored and peopled by Virginians.

Richard was the first to obtain a grant (the grant was signed by Lord Granville and was dated 1706, or seven years before that of John Pace). John Pace's grant was given by the State and was granted in the year 1713. Richard allowed his land to escheat and did not come until 1719/20, John did come, and lived in North Carolina until his death in 1727. He married Elizabeth Lowe, daughter of William and Ann Lowe.

Ref: "Abstracts of North Carolina Wills" by J. Bryan Grimes, Sec. STate. On file in the Office of Secretary of State, this would indicate that John Pace married this Elizabeth Lowe.

with the Lowes in Virginia, Elizabeth Lowe married John Hamlin and Micajah Lowe in his will, 1702, names "my mother-in-law, Elizabeth Hamlin."


Correspondence from Mr. Homer M. Pace of Charleston, South Carolina will verify this. He says:

Regarding the Pace family of Virginia and North Carolina, I am a descendent of one branch of the North Carolina group, and it may be that I can furnish you with some information of value.

My father told me that our family could be traced back to the early days of the Virginia Colony. I am familiar with some records of Richard Pace I, at Jamestown in 1622-1626, also of Richard Pace IV and John Pace V, of Bertie Precinct in North Carolina.

Richard died about 1738 and John in 1727. I have copies of their wills. We have been told that Richard and John were descendents of Richard Pace of Prince George (formerly Charles City County) Virginia.

Also, I have records of a number of descendents of these two men including wills, marriage certificates, and Revolutionary War service records. I also have records of a number of descendents of the collateral lines.

I have a sketch of the old Pace coat-of-arms handed down to me. It is, I think, the same as one coat-of-arms described in one of Burke's publications.

The seal on the original copy of the Will of Richard Pace of Bertie Precinct, carries the impression of a lion rampant. People who have seen it say that the lion is not rampant.

-90-
The seal on the will of John Pace was removed or lost when the records were moved from some of the old counties of North Carolina to the Hall of History in Raleigh.

There are a number of wills, et cetera, on file in Wake and other North Carolina counties. There are a number of Land Grants in Raleigh. My family connections have lived in Wake County since before 1790.

James Pace, Jr. (son of James Pace Sr., and Sarah Eppes, his wife) came from Prince George County, Virginia, when a young man to settle in North Carolina. Ref: Land Grants, N. C., Chowan County. James Pace 630 acres on N. side Moratock River. 1 March 1719 (Book 8, page 175).


There is abundant proof that these four brothers, George, William, John and James Pace were the first to come to North Carolina and their uncle, Richard, with them, copy of Land Grant issued to James Pace for 620 acres in Chowan Precinct, N.C. On file in Dept. of State, Raleigh, N.C., Land Grant Book #8, page 175.

To all whom & c. know ye & c. Do give and grant to James Pace, Junr. a tract of land containing 620 acres in Chowan Precinct on ye No. side of Moratuck River beginning at a hicory in John Pace Sewishire, running S. 58 E. 354 pole to a hicory then S 55 E. 294 pole to a hiccory in Wm. Braswell's line then along his line No. 7 wt. 148 pole to a red oak at Braswell's corner tree then No. 39 wt pol to a red oak another of Braswell's corner tree, then No. 55 wt 76 po. to a red oak in Robert Langs line then No. 66 po. to a stump in ye straw mead to Matthew Sturdivant's line then along his and John Pace's line s. 45 wt. 300 po. to ye first station. To hand and to hold and c. March 1st 1719. Witnesses & c. Chas. Eden, Thos. Pollock, Fred Jones, John Hecklefield, Richd. Saunderson.

This deed was furnished by Mr. Thad Eure, Secretary of State, Raleigh, N. C. It is official and entirely authentic. It
is not recorded if James Pace lived on this tract, or if he sold it. However, he probably did not sell it immediately. He is next heard of in Edgecombe County in 1744.

Ref: "Colonial Records of North Carolina," Vol. 4, page 709. At a Council held the 24th of November 1744, at Newberne, James Pace was admitted to prove his right to property, 5 whites, no colored or slaves. James Pace, of Edgecombe, 450 A. 11/27/1744, Index 954.

Ref: "Colonial Records of North Carolina," Vol. 4, page 710. At a Council held 27th Nov. 1744 at Newberne, granted 450 acres (in what is now known as Granville County).

James Pace was first seen living in Granville County in 1746, as a citizen of this county which had been cut from Edgecombe one year previous (Granville was formed from Edgecombe in 1745), which left him in the part called Granville. He sold his land in Edgecombe that year, which had been granted to him by patent in 1744 and in 1749 he bought land in Granville on Cypress Creek.

The following date from Granville County records: 1746, James Pace of Granville County sold 450 acres in Edgecombe County on Tar River at mouth of Cedar Creek which had been granted to Pace by Lord Granville. April 6, 1745 (Deed Book A-23).

Ref: Deed Book "C" - 195, Granville County. 1749, deed to James Pace of Granville, by Lord Granville, for land in Parish of St. John's in Granville County on both sides of Cypress Creek Swamp. This deed proved, 1757.

James Pace is known to have lived in Granville County, N.C. in 1746 as a citizen and planter. He sold his land in Edgecombe that year (450 acres) on Tar River at the mouth of Cedar Creek which was granted to him by Granville on April 6, 1745. (Deed Book A, page 23, Granville County).

1753--James Pace of Granville, Planter, sold land on the southerly part of Tar River in fork of Crooked Creek, part of grant to Pace in 1752, by Lord Granville, Deed Book "B", page 256, Granville County.

JAMES PACE III, SON OF JAMES JR.

1760, deed to James Pace III of Granville, 630 acres on both sides of Cypress Creek. Deed Book "D" page 80, Granville County.

-92-
1760, deed to James Pace III of Granville, 550 acres in Cypress Swamp. Deed Book "D" page 81, Granville County.

The foregoing references are to the James Pace of Edgecombe and Granville Counties. (Granville was formed from Edgecombe in 1745).

James Pace of Granville County received a land grant in Johnston County in 1763, and in Wake County in 1779, on which latter tract of land he was living at the time of his death.

Ref: Book #14, page 241, Land Grant Records, Raleigh N.C.;


Cyprus Creek adjoined Wake County and no doubt it was the part made into Wake from Granville. Wake was formed, 1770, from Johnston, Cumberland and Orange. Orange had been cut from Granville and Johnston, 1753, so that part of Wake was formerly Granville.

Deed from Earl Granville to James Pace, recorded in book of Transcripts No. 1, dating from 1762 to 1771. Register's Office of Johnston County, Smithfield, N. C.

This indenture made this 1st day of January 1763, between the Rt. Honorable John Earl Granville of the Kingdom of Great Britian of the one part and James Pace of Johnston County of the other part.

Now, this indenture witnesseth that for and in consideration of ten shillings sterling money to the said John Earl Granville in hand paid by the said James Pace at or before the sealing and delivering of these presents the _____ whereof the said Earl doth hereby acknowledge. He the said Earl hath given to and by these presents doth give etc., unto the said James Pace his heirs and assigns for ever, all that tract or parcel of vacant land situate, lying and being in the county aforesaid on the southside of
Little River and on both sides Somers Branch, beginning at a white oak, thence W. 240 poles to a red oak thence N. 320 poles to a pine; thence E. 240 poles to a white oak, thence a straight line to the beginning containing in the whole four hundred eighty (480) acres of land. Together with all woods, etc., to have and to hold the said tract or parcel of vacant land all and singular other the the premises with their appurtenances unto the said James Pace his heirs, etc., forever.

Yielding and paying there pr. yearly and every year, unto the said John Earl Granville, his heirs and assigns the yearly rent or sum of nineteen shillings and two pence, half penny by yearly payments at or upon the 25th day of March and the 27th day of September in every year the first payment thereof to be made on each of the forementioned days of payment as shall first happen after the date hereof. Signed Seal, Tho. Child. Wit: Esq. Jas. Long, Test. Jas. Coupland, John Linton. Halifax 13th September 1763. Then the execution of the within deed was duly proved by the oath of John Linton. Let it be registered.

James Montford, A. G.

Jas. Montford, Recorded in Book of Transcripts, No. 1, dating from 1762-1771. Register's Office of Johnston County, Smithfield, N. C.

This deed from Earl Granville to James Pace, Johnston County, Sept. 1763, is interesting because the property described in this deed is the same as that mentioned in the will of James Pace. The will refers to property in Wake County that was cut off from a part of Johnston. There is no proof whatever that James Pace was the first settler in the section now known as Wake County.

Ref: Land Grant Records, Raleigh, N. C., Book 320, page 202:

1779 -- James Pace was granted 351 acres of land on Seymores Branch in Wake County. (This is the tract of land where James Pace Sr. was living at the time of his death, 1815, being designated in his will as "Sumoreo Branch."
SUMMARY: The first James Pace had land granted to him by patent in 1744, in Edgecombe County. In 1745 Granville was cut from Edgecombe. James Pace was living in Granville County in 1746.

To have been 21 years of age in 1744 when he applied for rights to property with five in family, he would have been born at least as early as 1723 with three children. It is more likely that he was born 1718 or 1719.

Even if from as late as 1720, he would have been 95 years old in 1815 when James Pace Sr. died. So, James Pace Sr. (died 1815) must have been the son of this James Pace of Granville County and born even as late as 1755. If this be true, then it was the James Pace, father, of Granville County who took out the land grant in 1763 in Johnston County and not the son.

Ref: Secretary of State's Office, Raleigh, N.C. File #669, Book 320, page 202, grant to James Pace August 9, 1779:

1779, State of North Carolina. To all to whom these presents shall come, Greetings. Know ye, that we for and in consideration of the sum of fifty shillings for every hundred acres, hereby granted paid into our Treasury by James Pace, do give and grant unto the said James Pace a tract of land containing three hundred and fifty one acres lying and being in our County of Wake—on Seymores Branch of Little River beginning at a pine in the said Pace's line, running west one hundred and thirty poles to a black, thence north one hundred and seventy eight poles to a red oak, thence east one hundred and sixty poles to a blackjack—Abraham Lawrence's corner, thence along said Lawrence's line north one hundred and sixty pole to the corner a black jack thence east twenty poles to a red oak, thence north sixty poles to a pine, John Lawrence's corner thence along said Lawrence's line east one hundred and sixty poles to a red oak on the head of the said branch, thence down the said branch south two hundred and eighty four poles to the said Pace's own corner and white oak thence along said Pace's
line west two hundred and forty poles to the said Pace's other corner pine thence to the first station as by the Plat hereunto annexed doth appear together with all woods, water, mines, minerals, heriditaments and appurtenances, to the said land belonging or appertaining to hold to the said James Pace his heirs and assigns for ever.

Yielding and paying to us said sums of money yearly or otherwise as our General Assembly from time to time may direct.

Provided always that the said James Pace shall cause this grant to be registered in the Register's Office of our said County of Wake within twelve months from the date thereof otherwise the same shall be void and of no effect.

In testimony whereof, we have caused our great seal to be hereunto affixed. Witness: Richard Caswell, Esq., our Governor, Capt. General and Commander in Chief at Kingston, the 9th day of August in the fourth year of the independence and in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and seventy nine. R. G. Caswell. By His Excellency's Command, J. Glasgow, Sec.

In 1779, James Pace received a land grant which is on file in the Secretary of the State's Office, Raleigh, N.C., File #669. It is recorded in Wake County, dated Aug. 9, 1779:

This deed was located "E" one hundred and sixty poles to a hickory, Abram Lawrence's corner, thence along said Lawrence's line north one hundred and sixty poles to the corner, a black jack there "E" thirty poles to a red oak thence "N" sixty poles to a pine, John Lawrence's corner thence along said Lawrence's line "E" one hundred and sixty poles to a red oak on the head of said Branch, etc., etc.

The above James Pace must be the James Pace who died in 1815, and was the father of David Pace. As we have previously stated, the first James Pace, in North America, is recorded in Chowan County, as taking out a land grant of 630 acres, March 1st, 1719. The second James Pace is recorded in Edgecombe County, as applying for land in 1744 and receiving it in 1745, stating that he had "5 in family" and it was therefore the third James Pace of
North Carolina who received the grant in 1779 in Wake County.

In 1790 United States Census gives the following:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Names</th>
<th>Free White males 16 years and upward including head of family</th>
<th>Free White males under 16</th>
<th>Free White females including head of family</th>
<th>Slaves</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>JAMES PACE</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Thus, in 1790, James Pace Sr., was living in Wake County and had 4 sons and 2 daughters.

Ref: Wake County, N.C. Records, Wills 12, page 6. James (X) Pace, Senior, will not dated, probated Feb. Term 1815, of Wake County. Abstract, wife, Vinney Pace, 3 younger daughters, Betsy, Grey and Vinney Pace. Youngest son, John Pace and son David Pace, son James Pace Junior. Wit: Hardyman Dunn, Richard Putney. The foregoing Last Will and Testament of James Pace dec'd was returned into court and ordered to be recorded. B. S. King, Clerk, Record # 12, 1815-1816, Wake County.

Will of James Pace Senior of Wake County:

In the name of God, Amen. I, James Pace Senior of Wake County and State of North Carolina, being of sound mind and memory do hereby constitute and ordain this my last will and testament in the manner and form following to wit:

I give unto my beloved wife, Viney Pace, the plantation whereon I now live containing one hundred acres be the same more or less and bounded as followeth to wit: beginning at a maple in the Shingle Branch thence south to a red oak in Benjamin Dunn's line thence east to a post oak thence north along a line of marked trees to the head of a branch in the old plantation thence down the said Branch to Sumer's Branch, thence up the Branch to the beginning which land I give her during her natural life and after her death to my youngest son, John Pace, and my
desire is that if he dieth without lawful issue to be equally divided between my three youngest daughters to wit: Betsy Pace, Creecy Pace, and Viney Pace.

I give and bequeath to my son, David Pace, one hundred acres of land be the same more or less and bounded as followeth to wit: Beginning at a post oak in Benjamin Dunn's line thence north to the Sumore's Branch, thence down the Branch to the mouth of the King Branch thence up the Branch to the mouth of Small Branch and Godfrey Fowler's Branch, thence up the said Branch to a red oak in William Walker's line, thence along Walker's line to Benjamin Dunn's corner, thence in Dunn's line to a post oak at the beginning.

I give and bequeath to my wife, Viney Pace, all my personal property during her life and after her decease to my three daughters to wit: Betsy Pace, Creecy Pace and Viney Pace.

Item I give and bequeath to my son James Pace Jr., the tract of land whereon I formerly lived containing seventy five acres be the same more or less and bounded as followeth to wit: Beginning at a red oak in William Walker's line thence down a spring branch cauled Godfrey Fowler's spring branch to the spring branch thence down the said branch to Burrell Bell's corner thence east on Bell's line to the Sceopersbery Branch, thence up the said branch to William Smith's corner in John Fowler's line thence to William Walker's line, thence in said Walker's line to the beginning. Signed, sealed and delivered in the presence of us, Hardyman Dunn (Jurat) and Richard Putney. Signed James Pace (Seal), Wake County.

Levinia Fowler was the second or third wife of James Pace and was not the mother of David Pace. David Pace was born about 1785 and his father, James, did not marry Levinia Fowler until 1800. Marriage license record of James Pace and Levinia Fowler (Levinia Fowler was not his first wife).

North Carolina, Wake County: Know all men by these presents James Pace and Willis Wall are held and firmly bound unto Benjamin Williams, Esq., Governor & c, or his successors in office the full sum of five hundred pounds current money to be paid to the said Governor, his successors or assigns for
the which payment well and truly to be made and done, we find ourselves, our heirs, executors and administrators jointly and severally, firmly by these presents, sealed with out seal and dated this 20th day of Nov. Anno Domini 1800.

The condition of the above obligation is such that whereas the above James Pace hath made application for a license for marriage to be celebrated between him and Levinia Fowler of the County aforesaid: Now, in case it shall not appear, hereafter, that there is any lawful cause or impediment to obstruct the said marriage, then the above obligation to be void, otherwise to remain in full force and virtue. Signed by James Pace (his mark) and Willis Wall (his mark). Signed sealed and delivered in the presence of Lewis Greene. This copy was made from the original on file with the N. C. Hist. Comm., Raleigh, N.C. The license was granted in Wake County, North Carolina.

Ref: North Carolina Historical Commission:

This is to certify that the following is an accurate copy from the records in the official custody of the North Carolina Historical Commission.

Reference as to the Revolutionary War. The United States of America to the State of North Carolina.

For sundries furnished and cash paid, the militia of N.C., VA and S.C. as allowed by the Auditors of Hillsborough District in Febry 1782 as P. ref. 81. To James Pace, currency specie 08.0 from the accounts of United States with North Carolina, Book "B" page 50. Signed A. R. Newsom, Secretary. On file in Raleigh, N. C.

James Pace Sr., who died in Wake County, N. C., had a son James Jr., also David and John, but the other son called for by the 1790 Census is not mentioned in his will (1815). His son, James Pace Jr., married in 1821, Jensey Dunn, the daughter of Hardiman Dunn.

Ref: Census 1790, North Carolina, the Pace family. James Pace head of household, Wake County, N.C., 2 males age 16 and upward, 3 free white females and 3 free white males under age 16 and zero slaves.
We return you now to the most important of the Pace immigrants to North Carolina -- Richard Pace -- (uncle of the four sons of James and Sarah Eppes Pace, who was the very earliest Pace to attempt a settlement in North Carolina.

It was in 1706, that he took out a land grant in Albemarle, but he did not come to settle on it. He allowed the land to escheat. Cullen Pollock re-patented it and later a law suit came up because Richard Pace did come to N. C. in 1719 and claimed part of it.
RICHARD PACE AND REBECCA POYTHRESS

Richard Pace, Jr. (son of Richard and Mary)

Richard Pace III (eldest son and heir of George and Sarah (Macock) Pace has been proven to have been born in 1638, had married Mary Knowles in 1661/2 and his son, Richard Pace, was living at the plantation "Macock" on Powell's Creek in Charles City County (now Prince George County) Virginia in 1659.

As stated, Richard Pace III married Mary in 1661/2 and was then still living in Charles City County.

From this section—from Charles City County and from Prince George County (carved from Charles City in 1702) and from Surry County (adjoining James City County from which Surry was carved), we find first that Richard Jr., IV, son of Mary and Richard, had patented land in Surry (which he gave to his daughter, Rebecca in 1719) and also, in 1724 (which he leased to three of his sons-in-law) and that he took out a grant of land in North Carolina in 1706, upon which he never lived, but allowed to escheat.

We know that Richard Jr. married Rebecca Poythress about 1699, his first child was born in 1700. Richard himself was born in or near the year 1665-1670, in Prince George (then Charles City County) and married there.

From this section his descendents came into North Carolina, South Carolina and Georgia. About 1719/20, Richard Pace, son of Richard and Mary Pace, grandson of George and Sarah (Maycock) Pace; great grandson of Richard and Isabella Pace, came to Chowan Precinct in Albemarle County, North Carolina, patented land there, was named as a free holder in Bertie Precinct in 1723, was elected a member of the Jury in Bertie Precinct in 1723; was Vestryman in Bertie Precinct which was still Albemarle County in 1727; died in Bertie County, N.C. leaving a will dated March 13th 1736, probated February Court 1738. He left (before leaving Virginia having married Rebecca Poythress) widow, Rebecca and ten children, all of whom were married when he made his will in 1736.

In an effort to find out something about Richard Pace Jr. (IV) who married Rebecca Poythress before he came to North Carolina, I wrote to the secretary of the Commonwealth of
Virginia, to find out whether he had lived in Surry or if he only owned land in that little county, now Surry.

I know he was living in Prince George in 1718, because there is a deed recorded between Richard Pace and Francis Poythress. His daughter, Rebecca, had just married John Bradford and the land given to them, in 1719 by her father, was probably a dowry.

Ref: Land Grants in Surry County, VA, by Richard Pace. Letter from Ralph E. Wilkins, secy., Richmond, VA, August 7, 1944:

Dear Miss Jones:

These are the only references we find in the name of the above mentioned person in said County. If you desire an examination of the General Index to Land Patents which include all counties extant between 1623 and 1774, the fee for such search will be $1.00. In Surry we find two patents in the name of Richard Pace, viz:

285 acres on N. side of Three Creeks in Surry, Co., 12 July 1718.

1220 acres in Surry Co., between the Three Creeks of the Otterdaw Swamp, Lawne's Creek Parish, 5 Nov. 1724.

Very truly yours,
R. E. Wilkins, Secretary

Land Grant--285 acres, Office of the Secretary of the Commonwealth. Richard Pace, 185 acres new land know yee:

George by the Grace of God of Great Brittain, France and Ireland, King Defender of the faith & C.

To all to whom these presents shall come, Greetings that for diverse good causes and consideration of the sum of thirty shillings of good and lawful money for our use paid to our Receiver General of our Revenues in this our Colony and Dominion of Virginia. We have given, granted and confirmed and by these presents for us our heirs and successors do give grant and confirm unto Richard Pace of the County of Surry one certain tract or parcel of
land containing two hundred and eighty five acres lying and being on the north side of the Three Creeks in the said County of Surry and bounded as followeth to wit: Beginning at a white oak on the Creek's side, a corner of Capt. John Mades' land thence by Gaddes' line, east by north, thirty nine poles to a light wood point in George Hamilton's line thence by Hamilton's line north five degrees west eighty five poles to a red oak and east south east ten poles to a light wood post, a corner of George Passmore's land then by Passmore's line north east ninety-seve poles to a hickory and north north east one hundred and eight poles to a hickory then north seventy five degrees west fifty poles to a white oak then south seventy degrees west one hundred and sixteen pole to a small hickory then south eighty degrees west eighty five pole to a red oak, then south sixteen degrees west two hundred and thirty pole to a poplar by the side of the Three Creeks aforesaid and down the various courses of the run of the said Creeks to the beginning.

With all woods, under woods, swamp, marshes, low grounds, meadows, feedings and his due thereof all vines, mines and quarries as well discovered as not discovered within the bounds aforesaid and being part of the said quantity of two hundred and eighty-five acres of land and the rivers, waters and water courses therein contained together with the privileges of hunting, fishing, fowling, and all other profits, commodities and hereditaments whatsoever to the same part thereof belonging or in any wise appertaining.

To have, hold, possess and enjoy the said tract or parcel of land and all other the above before granted premises and every part thereof with their and every of their appurtenances unto the said Richard Pace and to his heirs and assigns for ever. To the only use and behoof of him the said Richard Pace his heirs and assigns for ever. To be held of us our heirs and successors as of our manor of East Greenwich in the County of Kent in Free and Common Soccage and not in Capell nor in Knight's service.

-103-
Yielding and paying unto us our heirs and successors for every fifty acres of land and so proportionately for a lessor or greater quantity, then fifty acres the fee rent of one shilling yearly to be paid when the Feast of St. Michael the Archangel, provided always that if three years of the fee rent shall at any time be in arrears and unpaid or if the said Richard Pace, his heirs and assignees do not within the space of three years next coming after the date of these presents cultivate and improve three acres part of every fifty of the tract above mentioned, then the estate hereby granted shall cease and be utterly determined and thereafter it shall and may be lawfull to and for us our heirs and successors to grant the same lands and premises with the appertenances unto such other person or persons as we our heirs and successors shall think fit.

In witness whereof we have caused these our letters patent to be made. Witness our trusty and well beloved Alexander Spotswood, Esq., our Lieut. Governor and Commander-in-Chief of our said Colony and Dominion of Williamsburg under the Seal of our said Colony the twelfth day of July one thousand seven hundred and eighteen in the fourth year of our Reign. A. Spotswood, State Land Office, Patent Book No. 10, page 389.

Ref: Prince George County, VA, Records, 1713-1728, Part I

Richard Pace of Parish of Lawne's Creek, Surry County, 1719, planter to John Bradford of Surry and Parish aforesaid, planter, etc., Signed Richard Pace. Sealed with red wax.

Ref: Surry Co. VA., Wills and Deeds 1716-1730. Bradford's Will and Deeds:

John Bradford and Rebecca his wife of the County of Surry and Nicholas Hatch of the County of Prince George, 285 acres more or less situate lying and being int he Parish of Lawne's Creek in Co. of Surry on north side of Three Creeks the said land being granted to Richard Pace by patent dated on July 12, 1718, as by the said patent reference being thereunto had with more fully appears
and by the said Richard Pace conveyed to sd John Bradford in fee simple—George Heubelton's line to have and to hold the sd land—the premises with appurtenances unto the said Nicholas Hatch. Signed John Bradford and Rebecca Bradford (sealed with a wafer). Wit: Thomas Eldridge, Co. of Surry Court held 1722.

Same Ref: County of Surry Court held 1722, 20 day of Feb. 1722. Surry Co., VA, Wills and Deeds 1716-1730 (Ref: Surry Wills and Deeds, 1716-1736) Deeds 1719.

Deed—20th day of Feb. 1722—between John Bradford and Rebecca his wife of the County of Surry and Nicholas Hatch of the County of Prince George, 285 acres in Parish of Lawne's Creek, said land being granted to Richard Pace by patent, July 12, 1718, by said Pace conveyed to said Bradford in fee simple.

This day appeared in Court the said Bradford and did acknowledge the deed as also did Rebecca, his wife (privately examined). Appearing in Court, relinquished the right and dower in the within mentioned land.

This proves that Richard Pace had a married daughter by 1718/19. We know that his son (eldest) Richard, was born in 1700. It is also known, married Rebecca Poythress.

Encased in the Hall of History at Raleigh, N. C., among the Records of the Colonial Period, hangs a "Deed from the Earl Granville to land in Chowan County with map of same; these lands being on the Morattoke River, grant to Richard Pace." There are only three of these old land grants in the Hall of History.

This one was lent by the Devereaux family thru Mrs. John W. Hinsdale, of Raleigh. It is not known just when the original Land Grant, given to Richard Pace of N. C. by Earl Granville in 1706 came into the possession of the Devereaux family, but the property had passed out of the hands of Richard Pace by 1720. In what manner it came into the possession of Mrs. Hinsdale is as follows:

Joel Lane, of Wake County, N.C., married twice, both times to daughters of Colonel John Hinton and Grizzelle Kimbrough. His son, Henry Lane (born 1764) married his cousin, Mary Hinton,
and left four daughters. Two of the daughters, Peggy and Ann, married Moses Mordecai of Wake County. A daughter of Peggy and Moses Mordecai married John Devereaux. Margaret Mordecai and John Devereaux had a daughter, Ellen, who married J. W. Hinsdale, Raleigh, N. C., and she presented (or rather she loaned) the original grant to the Hall of History where it hangs, framed, on the wall, and is quite an interesting relic of early grants.

The land lay on the N.E. side of the Morattock (or Roanoke) River and contained 640 acres. The Land Grant was dated 22 day of October 1706.

It is known that Richard Pace was living in Prince George County, VA at that time. He never lived on the 640 acres he patented in Albemarle County, N.C. He allowed the patent to lapse and Cullen Pollock re-patented the land, took up the lapse and lived upon the land.

In 1719/20, Richard Pace patented 640 acres adjoining this land and in the survey a mistake of 30 acres occurred in favor of Richard Pace. Cullen Pollock entered a suit for the 30 acres and recovered. Below is the notation written on a card index in the files at "Hall of History" in Raleigh, N.C.

There is on display the original of Richard Pace's grant, the name spelled "Pase"---Richard Pase, 640 A. Oct. 22, 1706, Edward Mosely (signature). Deed from Earl of Granville to land in Chowan County with map of same.

It is very evident that Richard Pace lapsed the property and that Cullen Pollock surveyed and re-patented it. Cullen Pollock was the son of Col. Thomas Pollock, of Chowan, N.C. John Devereaux was a grandson of Col. Thomas Pollock (Governor of Albemarle County in 1712).

The land lay on the north east side of the Morattock, or Roanoke River, and contained 640 acres. The disposal of this property at his death by Cullen Pollock settles the question as to what became of the land and any title that the descendents of Richard Pace might think they had in it.

The original land grant has remained in possession of the descendents of Cullen Pollock, one of whom is Mrs. Hinsdale of Raleigh, N.C.
The grant reads: "The Rt. Honorable John Lord Granville, Palatine, etc., etc., sends Greetings. Original land grant of 640 acres to Richard Pase of Chowan Precinct, Albemarle County." Signed by Lord Granville. (the name is spelled "Pase")

By virtue of a warrant from under the hands of the Honorable Thomas Cary Esq., Deputy Governor and the Council and under ye seal of the Government bearing date the twenty second day of October Anno Domini 1706. I have caused to be admeasured and laid out unto Mr. Richard Pase, six hundred and forty acres of land lying on ye north east side of Marotoke River butting and bounding as in this platt as specified and delineated. Certified and returned this 22nd day of October Anno Domini 1706. Pr. Edward Moseley, Jun. Gov.

Richard Pace never lived on this land, he allowed it to lapse. He may have lived on the tract patented him in 1720. There is no record when he came to North Carolina.


At a Council held in the Towne of Matlercomach Creek the 4th day of August A.D. 1720, a petition was read showing that a tract of land containing 640 acres was patented to Richard Pase, that a petition was read from Cullen Pollock asking that a piece of ground left out by Col. Maule's mistake in surveying be granted to him. Ordered that the same be granted accordingly.


Thomas Pollock
Frances Foster
William Reed
John Lovick

Esq's Propr. to Deputys

Read the petition of Cullen Pollock showing that he formerly asked a tract of land containing 640
acres on the north side of Moratock River which was patented in one Richard Pace's name and that Col. Maule in his marking re survey for the petitioner on the said land for want of knowing "the line" left out of the tract near thirty acres and Richard Pace from whom it was lapsed now entered the same and surveyed it. And the petitioner believing that since the lapse was granted him for the whole tract and that piece taken up as aforesaid left out by Mr. Maule's mistake, he hoped it no ways bars him of his right therefore, humbly prays that the land so left out of the tract lapsed by the petitioner by Mr. Maule's mistake be granted him. Ordered that the same be granted accordingly. Adjourned to Saturday the 6th of August.

Nevertheless, the old grant is intensely interesting because of the age and the evidence which it gives as to the time when the Paces, Richard and his nephews, John, James, William and George turned their thoughts and desires toward North Carolina.

There is no record of any land grant or any patent for 30 acres issued to Richard Pace, at any time.

Richard Pace was almost 60 years old at the time of his coming to North Carolina in 1720/21. There does not seem to be any recorded instruments, or any data concerning the man after 1727, until he made his Will in 1736.

Richard Pace left land to his three sons, so he must have patented other land in North Carolina. To William he left 190 acres, the plantation where his son, William, was living. He also left William 320 acres, the Manor Plantation where Richard Sr. lived.

To Thomas, 290 acres of land on the Roanoke River, a plantation where Thomas lived.

This proves that Richard Pace was at the time of his will in 1736, possessed 800 acres of land.

In 1720, Richard Pace received a grant of 500 acres on north side of Pollock's Corner on Moratock River. July 28, 1720. It is very possible that since the 500 acres adjoining the 640 acres that Cullen Pollock re-patented, that the 30 acres could have been included in the 500 acre grant.
Ref: Page 268 (Folio)

North Carolina To the Surveyor General or his deputies.

Surveyed by virtue of the within warrant 500 acres for Richard Pace Jr. You are forthwith unto Richard Pace Jr., 500 acres observing it given et 1720. Signed C. Benfield; Thomas Pollock; Fred Jones; R. Sanderson; J. Hooks; John Green Dep. Surv.

His Excellency, John Lord Carteret Jalipin, etc. To all etc., know ye et do hereby give and grant unto Richard Pace Jr., of our said County a tract of land containing 500 acres lying on the north side of Morotock River, Pollock's Corner. Yowish Swamp, to John Green's Corner.

Ref: Land Grants on file in Land Grant Office, Raleigh, N. C. Richard Pace, County not given, 500 acres. Index No. 915, page 117, Book No. 3, location above Occapechy.

Ref: Book I, 1693-1720, Land Office, Sec. of State, North Carolina, Folio 268. North Carolina -- To ye Survey General or his Deputy:

Ye are to lay out unto Richard Pace Jun. 500 acres of land being due etc., observing etc., given etc., 1719. Surveyed by virtue of ye within warrant 500 acres of land being given to Richard Pace, Junior.


Bertie Precinct, North Carolina, list of Jurymen, 1723, Colonial Records, N. C. Richard Pace, John Pope and Jacob Pope.

Ref: "Hawk's History of North Carolina (1855)" page 66:

Included in the list of Jurymen, free holders in Bertie Precinct in 1720. Richard Pace

Ref: "Hawk's History of North Carolina, 1723," page 86:

The list which follows contains the name of all the free holders, living in all the precincts in 1723. It is copied from the manuscript copy of the laws of the year furnished by Mr. Rodman.
to which allusion is made in the preface. It is official and therefore authentic. Many of the family names here recorded are still to be found in the state, and it was thought it might be of interest to their descendants, especially to know the spot in which some of our older families were first planted and to trace in some degree the direction of their migration, thus ascertaining to a certain extent, the path as well of the pioneers in the work of settlement.

Therefore, to the names in some instances the writer accordingly to the extent of his knowledge, or on information, has appended the names of existing counties in which branches of the family that bore them fame lived, or are still living. Included in the list is the name of -- RICHARD PACE.


Laws of North Carolina, 1727:

An Act to appoint the north west part of Bertie Precinct, or district Parish, by the name of "North West Parish of Bertie Precinct" and for appointing vestrymen for the said Parish, and to appoint Commissioners in every Parish in this government to call the Church Wardens and Vestry to account for the Parish money by them received, etc.

In Article II, among others, are appointed Mr. Joseph Lane, Major Barnabas McKinney, Mr. Richard Pace, Vestrymen, for the Northwest Parish of Bertie Co., etc. Which said Vestrymen are to be summoned by the Provost Marshall or his deputy, to meet at the Church Chappel or courthouse, etc.

Ref: State Records of N. C., Vol 25, page 214, Laws of North Carolina:

An Act to appoint the north part of Bertie Precinct, a distance Parish by the name of Northwest Parish of Bertie Precinct and for appointing Vestrymen for the said Parish--and to call the vestry and church wardens to account for the Parish money by them received. Richard Pace and twelve (12) others appointed.
WILL OF RICHARD PACE OF NORTH CAROLINA

In the Name of God, Amen. The thirteenth day of March 1736, I RICHARD PACE of Bertie Precinct in the Province of North Carolina, being of sound and perfect mind and memory thanks be given to God, do make and ordain this my Last Will and Testament.

Principally and first of all I commend my soul unto the hands of God that gave it hoping through the merits death and passion of my Saviour, Jesus Christ, to have free pardon and forgiveness of all my sins and my body I commit to ye earth to be decently interred and as touching my worldly estate I dispose of ye same in the following manner and form that is to say:

First, I will that all those debts and duties as I do owe in right or conscience to any person or persons shall be truly contended and paid by my executor hereafter named.

ITEM: I give and bequeath unto my son, William Pace, that plantation with one hundred and ninety acres of land there­to belonging, where he now lives, to him and his heirs forever.

ITEM: I give and bequeath unto my son Thomas Pace and his heirs forever my plantation where I now live with three hundred and twenty acres land hereto belonging, reserving unto my dearly beloved wife, Rebecka Pace, ye sole use and benefit thereof during her natural life.

ITEM: I give unto my son, Richard Pace, five shillings silver money.

ITEM: I give unto my daughters, Ann Stewart, Rebecka Bradford, Amy Green, Frances Green, Tabitha Moore, Mary Johnson, Sarah House, each of them five shillings silver money.

ITEM: I give and bequeath unto my son Thomas Pace my plan­tation on Roanoke River with two hundred and ninety acres of land thereto belonging, also ten head of cattle, one feather bed, furniture, four pewter dishes, six pewter plates, two pewter basons, two iron pots, one skelet, one frying pan, to him, his heirs forever.
ITEM: I give and bequeath unto my loving wife, Rebecka Pace, all ye remainder of my estate of whatsoever kind to be by her quietly possessed during her life, and after her decease to be equally divided between my two sons, William and Thomas Pace for ye use and advantage of them and their heirs forever.

ITEM: I do hereby nominate and appoint my loving sons, William Pace and Thomas Pace my only Executors of this my Will, ratifying and confirming this and no other to be my Last Will and Testament. In testimony whereof I have hereunto set my hand and affixed my seal the day and year above written. Signed, sealed, published and declared by the said Richard Pace, to be his Last Will and Testament in ye presence of us ye subscribers. J. Edwards, William Boon, Benjamin Dukes, Jurats.


This is the will to which the seal bearing "The Lion Rampant" was attached.

In support of the statement that Richard Pace married Rebecca Poythress, the following is of interest, two daughters of Richard and Re becka married men by the name of GREEN.


In Surry County, Dec. 11, 1721, is a deed from Burwell Green and Ann, his wife, and Francis Poythress, all of Surry, to Robert Hunnicutt conveying 200 acres in Prince George County, part of a patent by Rebecca Poythress, April 29, 1692, one half of said land being in the possession of Littleberry Eppes and 350 acres part of said land, given to Rebecca Poythress, daughter of said Rebecca and the other 200 acres to said Ann.
THE LINE OF RICHARD PACE AND ELIZABETH CAIN, HIS WIFE, OF SOUTH CAROLINA THROUGH HIS SON, CHARLES PACE TO ALFRED G. PACE OF GEORGIA

Richard Pace III and Rebecca Poythress

1. Richard (1700-1779) m. Elizabeth Cain, 1723 moved to S.C.
2. William (1703-1775) m. Celia Boykin, d. in N. C.
3. Thomas (1708-1765) m. Amelia (Amy) Boykin, d. N.C.
4. Ann (---) m. Stewart, died Surry, VA
5. Rebecca (--- 1764) m. 1st John Bradford, 2nd Wm. Aycock
6. Amy (---) m. Green, no record
7. Frances (---) m. Green, no record
8. Tabitha (---) m. John Moore (d. 1753) lived in N.C.
9. Mary (---) m. Wm. Johnson, lived in N.C.
10. Sarah (---) m. House, lived in N.C.

The North Carolina Colonial Records, Vo. 4, page 521, proves that both William and Richard Pace were living in Bertie County, N. C. in 1740.

Thomas Pace had moved to Northampton County, N.C. where his sister, Tabitha, and her husband, John Moore were living.


Richard Pace took out two land grants of 200 acres each in Northampton County in 1743 and 1744. Northampton was formed Bertie in 1741.

Ref: Memorandum of Land Grants on file in Land Grant Office, Raleigh, N. C.


In 1732, Richard Pace witnessed the will of William Cain in the County of Bertie.

A letter written by Mr. J. I. Bridges, Clerk of Superior Court of Northampton County, dated January 1735, gives a list of the deeds given by or to the various Paces from 1740. In this list the following were in reference to Richard Pace:

8/28/1744  Richard Pace to Wm. Hilliard, Bk. 1, page 144
11/26/1744 Richard Pace to Robt. Nichols, Bk. 1, page 146
5/10/1744  Richard Pace to Wm. Pace, Bk. 1, page 154
1/18/1744  Richard Pace to Thomas Pace, Bk. 1, page 194

Richard Pace married Elizabeth Cain in 1723 and in 1758, he moved to South Carolina. There is an old manuscript history in existence written by Barnabas Pace (son of Drury and grandson of Richard and Elizabeth Cain Pace) which is very valuable. He wrote: (SEE PAGE 160)

My grandfather, Richard Pace, was born on the patrimonial estate on the Roanoke River in Virginia in the year 1700, the eldest son of his father.

In his twenty-third hear, he married Elizabeth Cain and about 1758 he gathered his sons and daughters, sons-in-law and daughters-in-law, flocks and heards and moved down the Savannah River. He moved from the Roanoke River, about 1758, when his youngest child was about 7 or 8 years old, and settled about 13 miles northeast from where Augusta now stands, on the South Carolina side of the River.

He stayed there a few years until 1761, then he went to where his son-in-law, Cox, lived in the "High Hills of the Sautee" then shortly returned to his former home.

The history also states that he was born in Virginia in the year 1700 on the patrimonial estate of his father and grandfather and was the oldest son. They had nine sons and four daughters. My grandfather died about the time of the Revolution.

Children of Richard Pace IV and wife, Elizabeth Cain were:

1. James, married a French girl, all children grown in
Revolution

2. Silas, married Mary Newsome, died Edgefield County, S.C. in 1790
3. Charles married 1st a Garnett, 2nd a Shackleford. Died in S.C. about the time of the Revolution
4. Dredzel (Indian trader) married an Indian girl
5. Thomas died unmarried, buried in Georgia
6. Drury (born Oct. 1745, died 1801) married 1768 Mary Bussey
7. Richard V, no record available
8. Noel (should be written KNOWLES)
9. Barnabas (b. 1747) married 1st Agnes Aycock, 2nd. Polly Casey
10. Daughter, married a Mr. Cox, lived near the "High Hills of Sautee"
11. Daughter, married a Mr. O'Daniel
12. Sally, married Arthur Fort
13. Daughter, no record (Darius went to Nova Scotia w/James)

Richard Pace petitioned for land in South Carolina in 1757, which was granted in 1762. Richard Pace received another grant of land in 1773. There is recorded in the Lincoln County Courthouse, Lincolnton, Georgia in Deed Book "H" page 92-95 the following item:

Transferred from Edgefield District of S. C. records. Recorded Lincoln County, GA April 15, 1811. Richard Pace and Solomon Newsome Jr., to James Carson, land granted to one Richard Pace and Peter Newsome, 1773.

Edgefield County, South Carolina Records: Richard Pace Jr., and Solomon Newsom Jr., to James Carson, sold part of tract of land granted to Solomon Newsome Sr. in 1773. Wit: Charlotte Pace.

Family records state that Richard Pace died in 1779.

Recorded in Lincoln County, South Carolina, District of Edgefield, 1808:

This indenture made January 6, 1808, between Drury Pace and West Cook, both of Edgefield District. Drury Pace sells, bargains and releases for $50 all lands situated in Lincoln County known by name of Pace's Island in Savannah River, being granted Richard Pace, December 1762, and was 22 acres. Wit: Richard B. Pace, Enoch Sharpton.
Ref: "Colonial Records" by Candler, Vol 7., page 953. Richard Pace, February 1759. Petition of Richard Pace for 100 acres land on an island in Savannah River, one half mile below an island called Johnson's, 30 miles below Augusta.

Ref: "History of Georgia" by Allen D. Candler, Vol. 8, page 903. Council held at Savannah, Wednesday, 14 Feb. 1759:

100 acres petition of Richard Pace setting forth that he was settled in the Province, had no lands therein and was desirous to obtain a grant of land for cultivation. Therefore, praying for 100 acres on an island in Savannah River about one half mile below island called "Johnson's Island" and about 32 miles above Augusta which if granted he engaged to cultivate and improve same. Granted, resolved on condition only that petitioner take out a grant for said land within seven months of this date and that he doth also register said grant in Registrar's Office of Province within six months from date thereof that his Majesty may not be defrauded for his quit rent. The prayer of petitioner is granted.


In His will dated January 16, 1801, Recorded May 4, 1801, Richmond County, Georgia, Capt. Drury Pace (son of Richard) bequeathes to son, Drury, two islands containing 22 acres and 15 acres. (Note: this was the 1762 grant to Richard Pace).

Richard Pace and Solomon Pace, in 1773, deeded their interest in negro, Phyllis, to wife of Silas Pace. Wit: David Pace and Charlotte Pace.

The wording of the Will of Drury Pace Sr., refers to Drury Jr. and to William (his sons) each receiving 250 acres in Edgefield, S. C. on Savannah River, also two islands on Savannah River opposite said land the one containing about
twenty-two acres, and the other about fifteen acres.


In 1759, Richard Pace got 100 acres, said he had just arrived in the territory, had no land. In 1762, he got the island and 15 acres.

Ref: Edgefield, S.C., Deed Book 1815, page 341. Drury Pace and William Pace to West Cook:

150 acres, part of 200 acres granted Drury Pace on June 5, 1780
250 acres granted James Farris, Nov. 6, 1797
100 acres granted Richard Pace
220 acres part of grant to Drury Pace, June 7, 1774

Ref: Wilkes County, Georgia, Record Book "A" shows warrant September 5, 1785. Approved by examination 6 Sept. 1785 by Basil Lamar.

Land grant Drury Pace, 300 acres, bounded by Widow Henderson's land, land of Barnabas Pace and Henry Ware Sr., the Savannah River (containing the island mentioned of 15 acres).

In 1811, Drury Pace Jr., sold 250 acres in Edgefield District, South Carolina, to Jonathan Svibecker, including island, 15 acres in river. The 15 acres in Big Stephen's Creek. Wit: John McKinney Sr., and John McKinney Jr.

Now this 22 acre island in the Savannah River was that island granted one Richard Pace in 1762. Richard Pace applying for 100 acres in 1759, said he had recently reached the province and had no land and received 100 acres and an island of 22 acres.

The Richard Pace-Elizabeth Cain couple died about or just before the outbreak of the Revolutionary War, and both are buried some 16 or so miles from Augusta in South Caroline, according to history written by Barnabas Pace, the preacher, who wrote the letter to S. P. Getzen, his nephew, in 1853, telling of the death of his daughter, Martha Gurley.

Record of Richard and Elizabeth (Cain) Pace of South Carolina, son Charles Pace, wife Miss Shackleford of Georgia:
Richard Pace, son of Richard and Rebecca Pace, was born 1700 in Virginia. He married Elizabeth Cain in 1723. They moved first to Northampton County, N. C. in 1758, he moved with his family to South Carolina. But Richard Pace and his wife died in S. C. He died in 1777 or 1778.

Richard Pace received land, viz: 100 acres in 1762; 22 acres and 15 acres, islands in the Savannah River, a few miles from Augusta, GA but in South Carolina near Edgefield.

Richard Pace and wife Elizabeth (Cain) Pace had 13 children. One of these, Charles Pace, married a Miss Shackleford. Charles Pace died in Georgia. He patented land in 1765 in the County of Richmond, Georgia. He stated he had then a wife and one child. He had among others sons Dredzil and Silas.


Headrights granted by the Colonial and State Government from 1754 to 1800 (GA) 1756 to 1774, St. Paul's, Richard Pace.

Ref: Deed Index in Archives and History Dept. of Rhodes Memorial Hall, Atlanta, GA, Franklin County, GA (founded 1786), Franklin Clewesville Court House. Book "CD" page 105. Deed -- George A. Pace to John Haley.

CHARLES PACE OF SOUTH CAROLINA AND GEORGIA

Wife: Miss Shackleford

Charles Pace had a son Dreadzil, who was a minor in 1778 and asked that Barnabas Pace be appointed his guardian.

Ref: Columbia County, Georgia record. There are many items relating to Dreadzil Pace, son of Charles, son of Richard Pace. Charles Pace died 1778, Dreadzil Pace died 1777, left property to Silas, son of Charles Pace.


Ref: Richmond County Records, Folio 48. Dreadzil Pace II, minor child of Charles Pace of Richmond County, deceased, asks that Barnabas Pace of Wilkes County, Georgia be appointed guardian 21 July 1778. Recorded Wilkes Co., GA Records, Dreadzil Pace II, son of Charles, died 1796. He had a son William.

Ref: Wilkes County Records, page 30, Folio 1. Dreadzil Pace of St. Paul's Province of Georgia sells to Dreadzil Pace Jr., son of Charles Pace, four head of horses creatures for five pounds, Sept. 7, 1770, Recorded Dec. 11, 1777. James Germany and Thomas Chadwick. Was for 1,000 pounds. Wit: Sarah Mead.

When Charles Pace petitioned for 150 acres on the Savannah River in February 1765, he stated that he had been 16 months in Georgia and that he had a wife, one child and a negro.

It is stated that Charles Pace died in 1778. At that time he had two sons, but we know of Dreadzil and Silas. We do not know how many other children he had. Dreadzil died in 1796.

James Pace who moved to Elbert County, Georgia, was dead in 1803. His son, James Jr., Administrator of estate
SILAS PACE, SON OF CHARLES PACE

Ref: Edgefield County, S.C., Records, Edgefield Courthouse Book 1802, page 158:

South Carolina, Edgefield District, Martha Robertson to Silas Pace. Know all men by these present that I, Martha Robertson, of the state and district aforesaid is held and firmly bound unto Silas Pace of same place in the sum of $2,000, to which payment well and truly made and done, I bind myself and my heirs, executors and administrators and assigns firmly, jointly and severally by these present to him and his heirs, executors, administrators and assigns.

Sealed with my seal and dated this 13 day of November 1801. The conditions of the above obligation is such that if the above bound Martha Robertson shall make or cause to be made or cause to be made a lawful right title to her part of the negroes received by John Newsom from Mary Pace (by a suit in the court of this district, October term, 1801), then the above obligation to be null unless the remain in full force and virtue (?).

Signed in the presence of Richard Robertson, Luray Robertson, Martha Robertson (her mark).

If John Newsome should commence a new suit of law, I, Silas Pace, do hereby bind myself in a bond of one thousand dollars for to beat the expense of and trouble of any claim that John Newsome should file against Luke Devore as stated, dated the 13 day of Nov. 1801. Signed Silas Pace.

Wit: Richard Robertson, South Carolina, Edgefield Dist. Personally appeared Richard Roberson beofre me and after being sworn on his oath, saith that he was present and saw Martha Robertson make her mark unto the within instrument of writing and acknowledgement the same for the use and purpose within mentioned and also saw Lucretia Robertson make her mark as a witness to the same with herself and the deponent also saw Silas Pace sign the above instrument of writing and he the deponent subscribed his name as a witness to the same. Sworn to this 10th day of Feb. 1802, before me, Richard Robertson, Recorded 10 Feb. 1802.

Ref: Edgefield S.C. Records, Deed Book 20, page 34:

-121-

Same reference, page 279:

Silas Pace to Russell Squyars, deed dated March 3, 1801, $200, 79 acres adjoining James McWilliams and Thomas Evans, on a branch of Turkey Creek and Stephens Creek and waters of Savannah River. Witnessed by Thomas Evans and A. Williams.

Deed Book, Vol 21, page 138:

John and Silas Pace from Abner McWilliams, deed dated March 7, 1801, $817, 340 acres on branch of Cuffeetown Branch of Stevens Creek of Savannah River, part of 540 acres originally granted to John Crow March 6, 1786. Wit: Pleasant Thurmond and John Lyon.

Deed Book, Vol 22, page 425:


Ref: Edgefield, S.C. records:

Mary Pace appointed Admix. as widow of Silas Pace, 26 May 1802/3, with sureties John Talbot and James Finley. Appraisers were James W. Williams, William Hall and Richard Quarles and John Lyons.

After the death of her husband, Silas Pace, his widow, Mary, moved her family across the river into Georgia and located in Columbia County.

Ref: Columbia County Records, Deed Book "M", pages 292, 293, 295, 296:

-122-
Mary Pace to her children each a separate deed dated Sept. 20, 1803, for love and affection, witnessed by H. Hampton and Thomas Napier and signed by her mark: To daughter Mary Ann, 4 negroes, Edy, Jacob, Ira and Agg during mother's lifetime.

To daughter Sarah Day of S.C., negro woman, Lucy, for Mary's lifetime

To son, William Pace, negro Charles, same

To son, Silas, negro Stephen, same

To son, James, Personalty (grandson)

Summing this up we learn that: Silas Pace and wife, Mary, (who was his cousin, Mary Pace) Pace had children:

1. Mary Ann Pace
2. Sarah Pace--married--Ray
3. William Pace
4. David Pace
5. Silas Pace
6. James Pace
7. John Pace

and probably others

Ref: Columbia County, Georgia Records, Deed "M" pages 92, 93, 94, 95, 96, Deed Mary Ann Pace to her children dated September 20, 1803, lifetime interest in slaves. Wit: Thomas Napier. As follows: to daughter, Mary Ann Pace (Edy, Ned, Jacob and Agg); to David, Phillis, and to Silas, Stephen; to Sarah Ray of S.C., Lucy; to William Pace Charles, to David---

Ref: Deed "F" page 294:

William Pace as Adm. of Mary Pace, deceased, sells man "Bates" to John Pace on Dec. 10, 1804.

Ref: Elbert County Records, James Pace, Georgia D.A.R. Chapters, Historical Collections, Vol. 3, page 228. Land grant to James Pace, self and 5 in family, June 1, 1807.

Ref: History of Franklin County, GA. Index Cards in GA Dept. of Archives and History, on file at Rhodes Memorial Hall, Atlanta, GA:

-123-
James Pace, Sat., November 12, 1803. Notice of bill -- to grant certain privileges to James Pace (of Elbert County) -- legal representative of James Pace, deceased. (Ref: House Journal 1803, page 13).

Ref: "Irwin County History"

Irwin County was organized in 1818 out of treaty lands acquired from the Creeks, home of the early Representatives of Irwin County in the General Assembly were: Charles Culpepper and Pace of Georgia.

Confusion will result in placing families unless one is familiar with the formation of counties. Often a statement is made that a person was born in a certain county on a certain date, when that county was not made until some years later.

Pace family records state that Alfred G. Pace was born in Elberton, Elbert County, Georgia in 1810. That he moved to Pike County where his son, James Herman, was born in 1855. There is no discrepancy in these statements with the formation of these two counties. Elbert County was taken off of the original county of Wilkes in 1790. So that makes his place of birth correct.

The Hale Brothers, Civil and Mining Engineers of Atlanta, Georgia, made a map in 1895 called "Hale's Original County Map of Georgia" showing present and original counties and land districts, compiled from State Records. This work is filed in the Office of the Secretary of State in the State Capitol Building in Atlanta. It states:

FORMATION OF COUNTIES

a. Headright Counties
b. Land Lot Counties (formed by lottery as Land Districts, formed from 22 of the original counties)
   Elbert was formed from Wilkes
   Pike was formed from Monroe (which was made in 1821 by lottery)

This map gives the 10 original "Headright Counties" as Burke, Camden, Chatham, Effingham, Franklin, Glynn, Liberty, Wilkes, Richmond and Washington.
The map also gives as original Land Lot Counties from which Land Districts were made, the following 22 counties:

The first Land Lottery was in 1803 with counties: Appling, Baldwin, Carroll, Cherokee, Coweta, Dooley, Troup, Early, Fayette, Gwinnett, Hall, Habersham, Henry, Walton, Wilkinson, Houston, Irwin, Lee, Monroe, Muscogee, Rabun and Wayne.

Elbert was taken off of Wilkes in 1790, but was not a Lottery County. Pike was taken from Monroe (which was made in 1821) and was by Lottery.

The parents of Alfred G. Pace were living in Elbert County before Monroe and Pike were formed. It is perfectly safe therefore to look to Wilkes County to find the Georgia Pace immigrant. Undoubtedly Alfred G. Pace's father went to Elbert from Wilkes, (the ceded lands) or Columbia. Wilkes was made a county in 1777 (it had been settled from 1771) from all the ceded lands north of the Ogeechee watershed. From it was taken:

1790 Part of Wilkes made into Elbert
1793 " " " " " " part of Warren
1793 " " " " " " part of Lincoln
1802 " " " " " " Greene, now Oglethorpe
1811 " " " " " " Madison from Elbert
1825-1828 " " " " " Taliaferro
1853 " " " " " Hart from Elbert

Ref: "History of Pike County, 1822-1922, Zebulon" by Rev. R. W. Rogers, page 68: Courts of Pike Courts of Pike County, Georgia. The first Superior Court was organized Sept. 15, 1823. Officers and their terms of office of the Superior Court were: 1849-1853 -- Joseph E. Culpepper, Sheriff.

The Pike boundaries were laid out in 1822. In 1824, a part was added to Upson. It was bounded on the north by Fayette and Henry; east by Monroe and part of Butts; south by Upson; west by the Flint River and Line Creek. Zebulon received its name in 1825.

In the "History of Lamar County" compiled by the Willie Hunt Chapter U.D.C., we know: Barnesville, Milner and Piedmont Districts were formerly a part of Pike County. Page 40 gives a list of the names of those who helped organize Pike County,
and among names given in the record is JOHN J. CULPEPPER.

On page 203 of the same reference is given: Deed, dated April 1851, from Josiah Holmes to the Trustees of the Barnesville Methodist Church. This deed witnessed by John J. Culpepper and dated December 4, 1854.

The Muster Roll of Co. "G" First Reserves, Army of Troops, April 1864, is listed showing the soldiers dead and among these is Frank Culpepper.

Barnesville, the largest town in Pike, was too far from Zebulon and Forsyth, the County seat of Pike and Monroe, so the formation of a new county was made, called Lamar.
FAMILY RECORD OF ALFRED G. PACE

Given to Noble H. Pace by Rev. J. H. Holder, Iuka, Miss.,
typed March 1, 1948:

Alfred G. Pace was born in 1810 in Elberton, Elbert County, Georgia and died in 1891. He moved with his family to Pike County, Georgia. From Pike County he moved to Newton County, Mississippi in 1848.

In 1860, they moved to Independence, Tate County, Mississippi where they lived one year. From that place they moved to Lewisburg, Arkansas. After one year’s residence there, they moved back to Mississippi and settled in west Tate County where they made their home until the death of A. G. Pace and wife.

Melvina Gigger Pace was born in Abbeville, South Carolina. Her paternal grandfather, Gigger, emigrated to Edgefield, Georgia (error, Edgefield is in South Carolina over the Savannah River from Georgia) from Germany. He became a rich indigo planter, owned many negro slaves. One season failure of crops cost him $5,000, a sizable sum for that day and time.

He was a heavy drinker, lost his property and is reported to have died of drinking. Her maternal great grandfather was Lord Culpepper, came to America from Ireland. He migrated to Abbeville (or Edgefield) South Carolina.

Uncle Dick Culpepper’s only grandson moved from Abbeville, S.C. to Pike County, Georgia. Here he was made Sheriff of the County, he was wealthy. He was very generous, loaned his wealth and lost it, lost more than forty negro slaves and other property.

Both Alfred G. and Melvina Pace are buried in the old Singleton Springs Cemetery in west Tate County, Mississippi. Their children were:
1. Charles Franklin ) twins born on
2. Edward ) August 21, 1853
Edward died August 1915
3. James Herman Pace, born Sept. 4, 1855, Zebulon,
Pike County, Georgia
4. Carrie Pace, married Dale
5. Melvina Eudora Pace, married 3 times, Lucket;
Haynes and Boyd
6. Eugenia Elesif Pace, married Holder
7. Richard Pace
8. Harriet Pace, married Thornton
9. George Pace

Charles Franklin Pace was never married. He was a cripple
from infancy, infantile paralysis made him go on hands and
knees.

Edward Layfette Pace (Charles' twin) was married twice, first
to Emma Leonard and second to Elizabeth Rigsby.

James Herman Pace was married three times, first to Kate
Leonard (sister to Emma, Ed Pace's wife). They were the
daughters of Mr. Tom Leonard. Both died of tuberculosis.
His second wife was Lena Miler of Abbeville, Mississippi.
His third marriage was to Miss Pearl Coopwood of Tennessee.

George Pace died early in life, was never married.

Carrie Pace married Robert W. Dale of Arkabutie, Miss.
She did not live many years. After her death Robert Dale
moved to California.

Melvina Eudora (Maggie) was married three times, first to
a Mr. Luckett who died soon after they married. She was
then married to a Mr. Haynes. He did not live many years.
After a widowhood of several years she was married to James
L. Boyd who also died leaving her a widow a third time.

Eugenia Elesif married James Allen Holder, October 18, 1858.
Four children were born to them. She was born April 11,
1851, died September 3, 1878

Richard died in his youth, never married.

Harriet was married to Tony Thornton and lived many years
in Arkansas and died there.

The Pace family was Methodist in religion except for Edward
Layfette and James Harmon who married Baptist girls in their
first marriage and joined the Baptist Church with them.

-128-
LINEAGE OF THE PACE FAMILY:

VIRGINIA:
1. Richard I and Isabella
2. George and Sarah
3. Richard and Mary

NORTH CAROLINA:
4. Richard Jr. and Rebecca

SOUTH CAROLINA:
5. Richard III and Elizabeth
6. Charles and Elizabeth
7. Silas and Mary Elizabeth
8. James Sr., married his cousin, Mary
9. Alfred G. and Melvina

There are many puzzling angles to this Pace genealogy which may be the reason that so much has been left unwritten. In the first place, they lived mostly in Virginia Counties where all records except a few, were destroyed, viz: James City County and Charles City County.

Documentary records prove the first three generations as to grandfather, son and grandson (Richard, George, Richard), but there are still some gaps. Every effort has been made to discover the maiden name of Isabella, wife of Richard Pace the immigrant of "Pace's Paines" but no record is in existence to show who she was before she married Richard Pace or whether or not they married before they came to Virginia. It is recorded that both Richard and Isabella paid their passage over, whether married or single, or on the same boat it is not known. However, as both were "Ancient Planters" they had to come to Virginia before 1616, and they had to be English and Protestant.

Land Grants were not issued in Virginia before 1623, except to Ancient Planters. Isabella and Richard Pace received their land in 1620 and called it "Pace's Paines" which was in James City and the records of James City are entirely destroyed.

Generation I, Richard Pace, Immigrant to Virginia, wife Isabella. Only known child, George. Location, "Pace's Paines" in James City over the River from Jamestown and four miles above.
As to George (Richard) it has been proved that he was the son of Richard and Isabella, but no record of his date of birth is recorded or whether he was born in Virginia or in England. The first mention of George Pace is in 1628, when he is supposed to have reached his majority. He moved to Charles City when his mother and stepfather moved about 1632. There in 1637, he married Sarah Maycock, daughter of Capt. Samuel Maycock of the Council. Their first child was born in 1638. Both George and Sarah Pace were dead before January 1655. George Pace patented 1,700 acres of land in Charles City in 1650 and 557 acres in 1652.

Generation II, George Pace, son of Richard and Isabella lived in James City and in Charles City--wife Sarah Maycock, all of Virginia. Had several children, oldest one was Richard, born 1638.

Evidence contained in the only book of Records saved of the Charles City County Courthouse fire, is found in an Order Book of the years 1655-1665. This book has been abstracted by Mr. Beverly Fleet and is available to the public. The following proves that Richard was the son of George. Ref: Charles City County, VA, Record Book 1655-1665, page 5, under the date of January 4, 1665, states that "Richard Pace the orphan and heire of George Pace, deceased, asks for a guardian for him and his estate during his minority."

Richard Pace reached his majority in 1659. On February 25, 1658/9, he made a deposition confirming a sale which George Pace made in 1650. In this document he states" I, Richard Pace, soyne and heire apparent of Mr. George Pace of the County of Charles City at Mount March in Virginia, and sonne and heire as the first issue of my mother, Mrs. Sarah Macock, wife unto my aforesaid father (being both deceased) etc., etc."

In this same book, page 327, under date of June 23, 1662, is the following record: "I, Richard Pace, with the consent of my wife, Mary Pace, have bargained and sold unto Richard Taylor that parcel of land, etc." This deed ran thus, 13 March 1661/2, Richard Pace "with the consent of my wife, Mary Pace" sells to Richard Taylor land, etc. It was signed by both Richard Pace and Mary Pace and recorded on June 10, 1662.

The last recorded instrument found in Charles City County regarding this Richard Pace is June 2, 1673. He was at that time 35 years old and had been married 12 years.
Mr. Clayton Torrence has compiled an Index of Virginia Wills and Administrators and covered every County in the State. He states what records are in existence and what are missing. Of Charles City he states, "Charles City County (formed 1634) one volume of General Records, 1655-1665, wills and inventories prior to 1759 missing. From 1769 complete."

Richard and Mary Pace are known to have had 5 sons and one daughter, viz: Richard Jr., James, George, John, Thomas and Elizabeth.

**GENERATION III**

Richard Pace (son of George and Sarah Maycock Pace) lived in Charles City County, Virginia. Wife, Mary Knowles, was from Henrico, an adjoining County, had at least five sons and one daughter: Richard Jr., George, James of Prince George County, John and Thomas of other Counties.

In 1732, Prince George County, VA was formed from Charles City County and there are several land grants and deeds recorded pertaining to the children of Richard and Mary Pace in the early 1700's. They had not moved, only just been in the "set down" boundaries of the new county when it was taken off of Charles City, consequently, we find Paces in Prince George from the date of its formation. Richard Pace 3 Sr., (George 2, Richard 1) was 64 years old when Prince George County was formed, an old man in those days. Presumably he died in Prince George, we can not find the date of his death nor of his wife, Mary.

The records of Prince George County were nearly all destroyed by the Federal Army during the War Between the States. The first record available is one book from 1713-1728, the Rent Rolls of 1724 for the county are in existence and George Pace is given.

Apparently, Richard Pace Jr. was the only one of the sons to move or buy land in Surrey County, VA. We do not find that he lived in that county because while he is called "Richard Pace of Surry" in 1724, we know that he was then living in "North Carolina." He did buy two tracts of land in Surry in 1718 and in 1724, but he gave his daughter, Rebecca, the land he bought in 1718 and he leased his sons-in-law the land he bought in 1724. He evidently liked to secure land, because in 1706 he patented 66 acres in North Carolina which he allowed to lapse. In 1770 he patented N. C. property again and is recorded "as a free holder and juror in N.C."
in 1723. So, we can easily trace Richard Pace Jr. (Richard^3, George^2, Richard^1).

First Ref: Deed Prince George County, VA, 1713-1728, pages 269, 270, 271, Nov. 11, 1718. Francis Poythress the Elder to Richard Pace, Deed, 400 acres. Test: Peter Wynne, John B. Bonner and Thomas Poythress. (Evidently this land was sold by Richard Pace) "Poythress and Pace to Goodwyn, 11 November 1718."

It was on July 12, of this same year, 1718, that Richard Pace patented the land which he gave to his daughter, Rebecca, and her husband, John Bradford. In the deed he is referred to as "Richard Pace of the County of Surry." The Office of Secretary of the Commonwealth wrote, "Richard Pace only appears twice on the land grant records of Surry." All of this is very confusing because this Richard Pace is shown as being a resident of North Carolina in 1723. Yet, he did patent a piece of property in Surry, VA before he was granted land in N. C. in 1717/20 and one afterwards in 1724.

LAND GRANT, OFFICE OF SECRETARY OF COMMONWEALTH

Richard Pace 1,220, New Land

George by the Grace of God of Great Britian, France and Ireland King Defender of the Faith &c. To all to whom these presents shall come, Greeting:

Know ye that for divers good causes and considerations but more especially for and in consideration of the sum of six pounds, five shillings of good and lawful money for our use paid to our Receiver General in this Our Colony and Dominion of Virginia, we have given, granted and confirmed and by these presents for us our heirs and successors do give, grant and confirm unto Richard Pace of Surry County, one certain tract or parcel of land containing one thousand, two hundred and twenty acres lying and being between the three creeks and the Otterdam Swamp in the Parish of Lawnes Creek in the County of Surry aforesaid and bounded as followeth to wit:

Beginning at the mouth of the Indian Branch on the West side of the Otterdam Swamp aforesaid thence up the various courses of the run of the said branch to a marked maple on the south side
thirty poles to a hickory, then south sixty-five degrees, west eighty pole to a red oak. Then north sixty-five degrees west two hundred forty-six pole to a gum and ash by the side of Pryers Branch, then down the various courses of the run of the said Branch to a marked gun then north sixty-three degrees fifty pole to a small black oak then south twenty-seven degrees east two hundred pole to three trees chopt inwards then south sixty-three degrees west sixty-six pole to a white oak saplin then south seventy pole to a white oak by the side of Pryers Branch aforesaid then south, south west one hundred pole to a red oak a corner tree of John Roberts land then by Roberts line south fifty degrees west due hundred and fourteen pole to a live oak by the side of the three creeks aforesaid a little above the great bridge, then down the various courses of the run of the said creeks to a marked hickory and white oak on the north side thereof, then north by west one hundred and two pole to a live oak saplin and corner of Barlow's land, then by Barlow's line south eighty degrees west sixty-eight pole to a pine north seventy-five degrees west eighty-four pole to an ash, north six degrees west fifty pole to a hickory north sixty degrees east seventy-five pole to a white oak north ten degrees west forty-four pole to a red oak, north east by north sixty-eight pole to a white oak east ninety-two pole to a spanish oak and south seventy-five degrees west fifty-three pole to a hickory near the head of a branch then down the various course of the run of the said branch to the Otterdam Swamp aforesaid and up the various courses of the run of the said swamp to the beginning.

With all woods, underwoods, swamps, marshes, low grounds, meadows, feedings and his due share of all veins, mines and quarrrys as well discovered as not discovered within the bounds aforesaid and being part of the said quantity of twelve hundred and twenty acres of land and the rivers, waters and watercourses therein contained together with the priviledges of hunting, hawking, fishing, fowling and all other profits, commodities and heriditaments
whatsoever to the same or any part thereof belonging or in any wise appertaining.

To have, hold, possess, and enjoy the said tract or parcel of land and all other the before granted premises and every of their appurtenances unto the said Richard Pace to his heirs and assigns forever.

To be held of us our heirs and successors as of our manor of East Grenwich in the County of Kent in free and common soccage and not in capite nor by knight service. Yielding and paying unto us our heirs and successors for every fifty acres of land and so proportionably for a lesser or greater quantity than fifty acres the free rent of one shilling yearly to be paid upon the Feast of St. Michael the Arch Angel provided always that if three years of the said free rent shall be at any time in arrears and unpaid or if the said Richard Pace his heirs or assigns do not within the space of three years next coming after the date of these presents cultivate and improve three acres part of every fifty of the tract above mentioned, then the estate being granted shall cease and be entirely determined and thereafter it shall and may be lawful to and for us our heirs and successors to grant the same lands and premises with the appurtenances unto such other person or persons as we our heirs and successors shall think fit.

In witness whereof we have caused these our letters patent to be made. Witness our trusty and well beloved Hugh Drysdale, Esq., our Lieut. Governor and Commander-in-Chief of our said Colony and Dominion at Williamsburg under the seal of our said Colony the fifth day of November one thousand and seven hundred and twenty-four in the eighteenth year of our Reign. Signed: Hugh Drysdale.

State Land Office Patent Book No. 12, pages 116 and 117.

Richard Pace never lived on this land, he leased property as shown in the following documents: Surry County, VA Richard Pace, Patent Book 12, page 116, 5 Nov. 1724.

-134-
State Land Office, Richmond, Virginia:

Richard Pace of Surry County, 1,220 acres between the three creeks and the Otterdam Swamp, beginning at the mouth of the Indian Branch on the west side of the Otterdam Swamp. (Comment -- the three creeks and the Otterdam were formerly in Surry County, thence in Brunswick County and now in the northern portion of Greenville County).

Brunswick County, Virginia -- Pace, Deeds, Wills, etc., No. 1, page 53, date (badly mutilated) Proved 7 June 1733. Brunswick County, Virginia, lease ace of Bart and n. of the County. Johnson's Will License from Pace, 300 acres:

Witness that Richard Pace for and in consideration of the sum of five shillings &c. in hand paid the Richard Pace whereof he hereby acknowledge and discharge the said William Johnson, his execors, page 54, release description a certain tract or parcel of land aforesaid and north side of hundred acres more or less being part of the said Pace by patent bearing date the fi thousand seven hundred and twenty-four.

Beginning at a white oak a corner tree of Nathaniel Harrison's line standing upon the side of the Cow Trap (Nap) Branch, running thence with a marked line to the main road to one hiccory, then with a marked line to a scrub oak standing upon the aforesaid Pace line, then with the said line to a corner tree standing on the Byers (Byars) Branch, thence down the said Branch to Nathaniel Harrison's line then with the said line to where it first began unto the said William Johnson. (Seal) Richard, Richard Pace (so badly mutilated). Brunswick County, VA, Deeds, Wills, etc., page 54, date 7 June 1733, Proved June 1733.

Richard Pace of Bertie Precinct in North Carolina and William Johnson of the County of Brunswick. This transaction was by lease and release -- two separate instruments, this is the same transaction as above and maybe we can fill in enough to piece out (mutilated) being

-135-
on the north side of Ryars Branch in the aforesaid containing three hundred acres. Date 2 1733, Proved 7 June 1733. Brunswick County, VA, Deeds, Wills etc., No. 1, page 56-57.

Richard Pace of Bertie Precinct in North Carolina and John Bradford of the County of Brunswick. Consideration (lease) 5 shillings, description, 680 acres and being between the three creeks—seven hundred and twenty-four referring to date the patent Hubard Garrell and William Johnson— it being the remaining part of the aforesaid twelve hun. Date—Brunswick County, Virginia Deeds, Wills etc., No. 1, page 58-59. This is so badly mutilated I can not tell anything about it, except I find the name probably the grantee, Hubard containing two (probably 240 acres) twenty-four (probably 5 Nov. 1724).

Comment, deeds of that period were made by lease and release, thereby making two instruments necessary to convey land. There were two instruments to record each to William Johnson, John Bradford and Hubard Garrell, all which were so badly mutilated that it was with difficulty to get the facts from them.

The reason I gave these deeds is that it proves that Richard Pace of Surry and the Richard Pace of Bertie, North Carolina, to be the same man. Richard Pace married Rebecca Poythress when he lived in Virginia and Rebecca, his daughter, married John Bradford, while Mary, another daughter, married William Johnson.

Richard Pace was married in 1699 and his eldest child, a son, Richard, was born in 1700.

In 1723, the son, Richard (Richard and Rebecca, Richard and Mary, George and Sarah, Richard and Isabella) married Elizabeth Cain. He moved from Virginia to South Carolina about 1758 or 1759 and died in that State in 1777 or 1778.

We do not find this branch of the Pace family in Virginia or North Carolina after that date. It has already been established that after Richard Pace had settled himself in a home about 13 miles above Augusta and lived there a few years. He moved to where his son-in-law, Cox, lived "in the High Hills of the Santee." The old Pace manuscript tells so graphically of his happy home in this location that a repetition of what he says will give descendents a vision of how enchanting the place was.

The High Hills of Santee, the Village of
Stateburg, 100 miles north east of Charleston, 20 miles southeast of Camden, a post town of South Carolina and the capital of Claremont County.

During the Revolution the village was situated on each side of the wide public road leading from Charleston and known before the Revolution as the King's Highway.

It was the thoroughfare for all traffic and travel between the up country and Charleston. Stateburg is surrounded by "high hills" each separated from the other by fertile valleys and streams. On the summit of each hill was a fine old house built of virgin timber, around each house was an orchard, a vegetable garden, smoke houses, stables and barns, and not far off were the quarters where the negro slaves lived and were cared for and most of these places had a family burying ground both for white and colored.

The indigo was the moneyed crop, the old indigo vats can be seen on the hillsides to this day, nearly all of these old places had a race course or track to prepare "for the great meet" in Charleston. In those days the Charleston Races were celebrated all over the world.

The "old hills" had their names and families during the Revolution. Mr. Thomas G. Sumter wrote a pamphlet called "Stateburg and its People" and he gives a description of the beautiful old hills and valleys that comprise the neighborhood of "Stateburg" giving the name of each house built on the hill, for each was named by the owner and each bears a history. Then the names of the owners and of every one who lives there and once called it "home" and their history, what each was distinguished for, whom they married, etc.

When Richard Pace moved to South Carolina in 1758 or 1759, he settled near Edgefield and patented land there in 1762. After his wife's death he went up into the Santee region and lived for a few years with one of his daughters, who had married a Mr. Cox. Then he returned to his former South Carolina home where he died in 1776/8.

As has been stated, his children were: James, Silas, Charles, Dredzel, Thomas, Drury, Richard, Knowles, Barnabas,
a daughter who married a Mr. Cox, a daughter who married Mr. O'Daniel, Sarah who married Arthur Fort and a daughter of whom there is no record.

Of the children of Richard Pace and Elizabeth Cain, we do learn more perhaps of his son, Silas, than of the others. He it was who left his property to the child of his brother, Charles, (named for him).

Of the children of Richard, Knowles Pace died in 1788; Thomas Pace died about 1793; Silas Pace died about 1790. Among the original settlers of the Quaker Colony of Wrightsboro were Silas Pace -- Thomas Pace. (Wrightsboro, GA)

Headrights granted by the Colonial and State Governments from 1754 to 1800, Georgia were:

1756 to 1774, St. Paul's, Thomas Pace, Knowles Pace, Silas Pace.

Recorded in the Secretary of State's Office, State Capitol, Atlanta, Georgia:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Land Grant</th>
<th>Vol.</th>
<th>Page</th>
<th>Acres</th>
<th>Year</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Knowles Pace</td>
<td>G</td>
<td>413</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>1769</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas Pace</td>
<td>G</td>
<td>319</td>
<td>200</td>
<td>1769</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Silas Pace</td>
<td>Y</td>
<td>718</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>1774</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Thomas Pace died at age 60, unmarried. He was engaged to Mrs. Leroy Hammond and willed her his property. After his death, she gave it back to his sisters and brothers.

Deed -- Thomas Pace to Mary Ann Hammond, widow of Leroy Hammond, all lands in Georgia for 5 shillings. Test: Reuben Coleman, Jeremiah Day and Leroy Hammond, Jr. May 22, 1793, this land also to be given after Thomas' death and not before.

Mary Ann Hammond of Edgefield County, S.C. (widow of Leroy Hammond, late, deceased), to Drury Pace of Richmond County, Georgia, all lands etc., to which she is entitled by deed from Thomas Pace deceased, after all debts to the estate have been paid, Dated December 8, 1794. Wit: John Henderson, William Pace and John Little.

Deed -- Thomas Pace to Thomas Garnett of Effingham County, 273 acres on Rocky Creek for 5 shillings, and to begin at his

Knowles Pace and Thomas Pace were both on the Georgia Roster of the Revolution. There are more records of Silas Pace (son of Richard and Elizabeth Cain) than there seems to be of the other children of Richard (d. 1777).


Data from Mr. Fred Webster, Austin, Texas, who states that "Knowles Pace died 1783, left his property to Leroy Pace, son of Barnabas Pace of Elbert County."

Ref: Wilkes Co., GA Records, page 50, Folio 20. Will of Knowles Pace of Wilkes County, Province of Georgia. Slave Queen to be free, but to remain in the protection of Henry Ware Sr. Esq. To Leroy, son of Barnabas Pace, residue of estate to be in the hands of Barnabas until Leroy is age 21. Ex. Barnabas Pace and Henry Ware, Sr., signed July 19, 1776. Prob. March 7, 1783. Test: Edward Bond, William Buckner, Nicholas Ware.

In 1769, Knowles Pace got 100 acre grant in now Elbert County, Georgia in 1771, he transferred land to Silas Pace and in 1786, Silas Pace sold the land to Ambrose Holliday, whose wife was Tebitha.

Headrights granted by the Colonial and State Government from 1754 to 1800 (Georgia) 1755-1756, St. George's Halifax. James Pace 1756-1774--St. Paul's, Richard Pace, Thomas Pace, Knowles Pace, Barney Pace, Silas Pace.

Recorded in the Secretary of State's Office, State Capitol, Atlanta, Georgia, Land Grant:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>NAME</th>
<th>VOL.</th>
<th>PAGE</th>
<th>ACRES</th>
<th>YEAR</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Richard Pace</td>
<td>D</td>
<td>241</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>1762</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Knowles Pace</td>
<td>G</td>
<td>413</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>1769</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas Pace</td>
<td>G</td>
<td>319</td>
<td>200</td>
<td>1769</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas Pace</td>
<td>I</td>
<td>319</td>
<td>200</td>
<td>1769</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barnabas Pace</td>
<td>I</td>
<td>877</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>1773</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Silas Pace</td>
<td>Y</td>
<td>718</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>1774</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Ref: To above grants, "Colonial Records of Georgia," Vol. 8, page 776, Vol. 10, page 13. The 22 acre grant, 1762, was

Dreadzel Pace died 1777, left his property to Silas, son of Charles Pace. Ref: Record of Court Lands Commissioner, Appt. by Gov. Wright to issue "ceded lands" 1773-1775. Dread Pace, South Carolina, no family, 100 acres on Broad River near Wawahchete Camp. Adj. Zachariah Lamar's back line, Augusta, November 23, 1773.

Ref: Georgia State Dept. of Archives and History, Rhodes Memorial Hall, Atlanta, GA:

Pace, Dread (came to Georgia from S.C.). No family. Granted 100 acres on Broad River at or near a place called Wawatchets Camp to join Zachariah Lamar's back line. Reserved for immediate settlement, Mr. William Cudgeon, Security, Journal Augusta Land Court, Nov. 23, 1773.

Ref: "Wilkes County Records," page 33, Folio 38. Dreadzil Pace, Indian Trader. Silas Pace appointed Administrator Sept. 15, 1777. Bernard Heard, R.P. Dreadzil Pace I was an Indian Trader.


Now, Dreadzel Pace II, son of Charles Pace, died August 30, 1796, he had a son, William. William Pace, Adm. Estate of Dreadzel Pace (died 1796). William Pace and Drury Pace of Richmond County signed bond. Was for 1,000 pounds. Wit: Sarah Meade. Charles Pace died 1778, his son, Dreadzel died 1796.

Ref: Folio 48, Dredzel, minor child of Charles Pace, of Richmond County, deceased, asks that Barnabas Pace of Wilkes County be appointed guardian. July 21, 1778. Ref: Wilkes County Records. So, three of the 9 sons of Richard and Elizabeth Cain Pace are proven to have left no descendents viz:

Thomas Pace, Knowles Pace, Dreadzil Pace, this leaves us with six sons:
1. James Pace, who married a French girl
2. Silas Pace, who married Mary Newsome
3. Charles Pace, who married 2nd Miss Shackleford
4. Drury Pace, who married Mary Bussey
5. Barnabas Pace, who married 1st Agnes Aycock

Charles Pace died 1778. He married 2nd Miss Shackelford. There are records of two of his children, Dreadzel and Silas named for two of his brothers.

Charles Pace applied for land in Georgia in 1765. He had a wife and one child at the time. Ref: "Colonial Records of Georgia" by Allen D. Candler, Vol. 10, page 289, February 1765. Petition, Charles Pace, had been 16 months in the Province, wanted 150 acres on Savannah River between Clews (William) Paris and John Fitch. Had wife, child and negro. In 1778, Dreadzil was not of age. Silas, the other son of Charles, probably was. Ref: Richmond County Records, Folio 48. Dreadzel Pace II, minor child of Charles Pace of Richmond County, deceased, asks that Barnabas Pace of Wilkes County be appointed guardian. July 21, 1778 (Records of Wilkes County). Dreadzil Pace I, died and left his property to Silas, son of Charles Pace, 1777.

Drury Pace Sr., was born August 6, 1742, died February 5, 1801, married Mary Bussey who was born 1745. Agreeable to Warrant made June 18, 1801, you are ordered to appear at the house of Drury Pace, deceased (was called to the appraisers to come and make an appraisal of personal effects). John Catlett, Macy, John Rhodes. Amount $3,151.50 personal property.

The earliest record of Drury Pace I that I have been able to find is in 1774 when he received land in Edgefield District of South Carolina. There are two items recorded, one transferred from Edgefield District, S.C. to Lincoln County, Georgia in 1808 and the other of record in Edgefield Dist. S.C., in 1815 which proves that Drury received land in S.C. in 1874 and again in 1780, that his sons Drury and William sold Edgefield Dist. land and Lincoln County, GA land.

Capt. Drury Pace when he died, 1801, left his son, Drury Jr. 250 acres in South Carolina, including two islands, 15 and 22 acres and left son William 250 acres in S.C., and other boys got land in Georgia.

Now, this 22 acre island in the Savannah looks like and was that island granted one Richard Pace in 1762. His (Drury's) father, Richard, asked for 100 acres in 1759, said he had
recently reached the Province, had no land and received 100 acres and an island of 22 acres.

In 1790, Edgefield census showed Drury with wife and eight children. Drury Pace seems to have been in Georgia from first arrival until after 1776. In 1793 he was in Edgefield, S.C., but died in Georgia, 1801.


Ref: Wilkes County, Georgia Book "EE" page 97. Silas Pace from Joseph Robertson of 96 District, South Carolina, bill of sale to slave, Fillis, as "my wife's part" and dated April 27, 1784.

Ref: Deed Book "FF", page 95. Silas Pace of 96 District, South Carolina to Ambrose Holliday of Richmond County deed for 100 acres vacant around. Same reference, page 119, 273 acres.


Ref: "Legends, Memorials and Land Marks" by Knight, page 765, protest, signed by the inhabitants of Wrightsboro, August 10, 1774, contains almost a full list of the early settlers can be had. Among them is -- SILAS PACE.


Ref: Edgefield, S.C. Records. Mary Pace appointed Administrator as widow of Silas Pace, 26 March 1802 with sureties John Talbot and James Finley. Same reference. John Lyon appointed Administrator estate of Mary Pace, deceased 27 January 1807, bond of $10,000.

Ref: Deed Book "A" Richmond County, GA Records. William Edwards of Richmond County to Barnabas Pace of Wilkes County, 200 acres on Big Shoal Creek January 14, 1790. John Cochran Susanna Fannin, Test.

Barnabas Pace wife, Agnes to James Morrison land Wahatachee Creek, 1793. Barnabas Pace wife, Agnes, to Zachariah Clark land Wahatachee Creek other part of same tract, 1792.
Barnabas Pace made deed of 800 acres in Elbert County, GA to William Edwards on October 15, 1800. (Page 117, Deed Book "F"), Garrett Tureman of Elbert County to John Armstrong, 1795, Wit: Agnes Pace.

Barnabas Pace died 1805, Elbert County, Georgia, wife, nee Agnes Aycock, daughter of James and Cecelia Aycock. Said James Aycock died 1779 in "ceded lands" of Georgia. He came to Georgia in 1773 and in his application for land said he had "wife and 5 children" Agnes Aycock married Barnabas Pace, her cousin, about 1776.

Ref: Lincoln County Records, Georgia, Book "A" pages 16-62. Deed, Barnabas Pace and Agnes, his wife, and LeRoy, his son, recorded May 29, 1798. These Paces of Wilkes County, GA to Minor Winn of South Carolina, land bounded NW by Henry Ware, SE by Drury Pace, other land vacant. This land had been granted to Barnabas Pace by the Honorable George Matthews in 1794.

Barnabas Pace in Elbert County, GA in 1805, was born about 1747. From Deed Book in Clerk's Office, Carnesville, Franklin County, Georgia. Ref: "History Colonial Georgia Chapter National Society D.A.R." page 223, "1795, Barnabas Pace and wife Agnes." Benjamin Taylor and wife, Susana, of Wilkes County to Dr. Oliver Sr., of Elbert County, adjoining lands surveyed for Barnabas Pace and Walker Richardson, 1794.


Ref: Lincoln County Records, Richard Pace sold to George McKenney, recorded April 15, 1811, Book "H" page 90-92. All land owned by him above and below Lincolnton land granted Thomas Curry, March 15, 1787. Wit: John McKenny Jr., John McKenny Sr., and Drury Pace.

Richard Pace Junior and Solomon Newsome, in 1773, deeded their interest in negress, Phyllis, to wife of Silas Pace (she was Mary Newsome), Wit: David Pace and Charlotte Pace.
We have a very meager account of Richard, but family records give his death in 1787, and states that he was alive in 1775, also that he probably married Sarah Day, daughter of Peter Day, died 1796. Richard and Sarah Pace are said to be the parents of:

Charity Pace married George DeLaughter
Charlotte Pace " Ludbrook Lee
Elizabeth Pace " John Anderson
Mary Pace " James Rhodes

James Pace, oldest child of Richard and Elizabeth (Cain) Pace, married a French girl. All of his children were grown during the Revolution.


Ref: Historical cards on file in Georgia Archives and History, Rhodes Memorial Hall, Atlanta, GA, page 13, James Pace, Sat. November 12, 1803, notice of bill to grant certain privileges to James Pace of Elbert County, legal representation of James Pace, deceased. "House Journal, 1803."

Ref: 1790 Census of the United States, Elbert County, James Pace, 4 sons and 3 daughters, one son over 16, 3 sons under 16, 2 daughters. Sons were James Jr., David, John. James II died 1815. This explains the nine sons of Richard and Elizabeth (Cain) Pace of Virginia and South Carolina (1700-1777).

It has been proven by his petition for land that in 1765, Charles Pace, third child of Richard and Elizabeth (Cain) Pace was married and had one child. When he died in 1778, we know that he had at least two children, Dreadzel and Silas.

Ref: "Colonial Records of Georgia" by Allen D. Candler, Vol. 10, page 289. February 1765, petition Charles Pace had been 16 months in Province, wanted 150 acres on Savannah River between Glenn (Williams), James Paris and John Fitch. He had wife, child and negro.

Ref: Richmond County Records, Georgia, Folio 48. Dreadzel Pace II, minor child of Charles Pace of Richmond County, deceased, asks that Barnabas Pace of Wilkes County be appointed guardian, July 21, 1778.
Ref: Columbia County, Georgia Records. Charles Pace died 1778. Evidently he died in Richmond County, GA, although family records say that he died in South Carolina. Dreadzil Pace I, brother of Charles, 4th child of Richard and Elizabeth (Cain) Pace was an Indian trader and married an Indian girl. They had no children, he died 1777, left his property to Silas, son of Charles Pace.

NOTE: Charles Pace is called "Charles Pace of Richmond County, Georgia, deceased in a document of 1778, referring to son, Silas. Charles Pace is the great grandfather of Alfred G. Pace of Elbert County, Georgia, who moved to Mississippi.

Alfred G. Pace, b. 1810, Elbert Co., GA, d. 1891, Tate County, Mississippi. He married Melvina Gigger, no other information. Alfred was the son of James Pace and Mary Pace. James Pace was the son of Silas Pace and Elizabeth Newsome, Silas was the son of Charles Pace who died 1778 and Elizabeth Shackleford, and Charles was the son of Richard Pace and Elizabeth (Cain) Pace.
There is no more historic section of Georgia than Richmond County, the parent of all of Columbia and McDuffie and most of Warren and Jefferson Counties.

This territory was originally St. Paul's Parish which was incorporated as such 17 May 1758, and so called until 1777, when it was changed to Richmond County in honor of Charles Lenox, Duke of Richmond, a friend of the English Colonies in America.

In fall of 1735, a trading post was laid out by the trustees of the Colony. In 1736, Oglethorpe erected a fort for protection and detailed a garrison for its defense.

South Carolina had a monopoly on the trade with the Cherokee and Creek Indians, and the object of this fort was to direct some of this trade to Georgia. It was named Fort Augusta, for the Princess Augusta, wife of the Prince of Wales, afterward, King George III.

Oglethorpe himself visited the Fort in 1739, on his return from conference with the Indians at Coweta Town. About six hundred people were living at Fort Augusta in 1743, all engaged in Indian trade. Undoubtedly Dreadzel Pace I, the Indian trader, lived here, and it may be the reason that Charles Pace asked for land in St. Paul's Parish in 1765. Dreadzil left land to Silas, son of his brother, Charles.

Under a curtain of Fort Augusta, St. Paul's Church was incorporated in 1750, and a tax levied for its support. The church records from its organization to 1819 were destroyed when the church was burned, but it is said that copies are preserved in England.

In 1763, at Fort Augusta, or King's Fort, as it was sometimes called, a conference between the five Indian nations and the Governors of Virginia, North Carolina, South Carolina and Georgia was held to determine the boundaries between the Indian and white man's land.

From its very foundation, Augusta was the gateway into Georgia from the Carolinas and Virginia and even the sojourners left their imprint on its records. Much of

It was to Richmond County that Charles Pace moved with his wife and child in 1763/64. Dreadzil Pace I left property in South Carolina to Silas, son of Charles in 1778.

Silas Pace (son of Charles) wife Elizabeth, so says Miss Annie Jones, but a note included in this manuscript reference Eleanor Terrell, March 7, 1978, says that Silas Pace was the son of Silas Pace and Mary Newsome.


Ref: Edgefield County, South Carolina, Deed Book "N" on page 279, Silas Pace to Russell Squires, deed dated March 3, 1801, 79 acres adjoining James McMillian and Thomas Evans on a branch of Turkey Creek and Stephens Creek and waters of the Savannah River, paid $200. Wit: Thomas Evans and A. Williams.

Ref: Edgefield County, S.C., Deed Book "N" page 279, Deeds 21, p. 1382, John and Silas Pace from Abner McMillan, deed dated March 7, 1801, $817, 340 acres on branch of Cuffeetown Branch of Stevens Creek of Savannah River, part of 540 acres originally granted to John Crow on March 6, 1786. Witness Pleasant Thurmond and John Lyon.


Ref: Edgefield County, S.C. Records page 543, Silas Pace of Abbeville Dist. to William Penney of Newberry Dist., deed, January 16, 1805, 106 acres whereon said Pace formerly lived, being part of survey granted Joseph Tucker on branch of Cypher Creek, a branch of Turkey Creek waters of Stephens Creek on the Savannah River, adjoining Russell, Squires, Dickerson, Lumpkin, Wm. Blakely and Capehart. Wit: Richard Robertson and Dickerson Lumpkin.

Now, to get on to George A. Pace who we find up in Franklin at one time, Franklin County was formed from lands ceded to Georgia by the Cherokee Indians in 1783. In 1784 it was parcelled out as grants for Revolutionary Soldiers. Later many of the lands originally in Franklin were found located in Elbert County. Elbert was not an original County as was Franklin, but was cut off from Wilkes in 1790.

George A. (Alfred G.) Pace lived in Franklin or at least owned land there at one time. Ref: Index Card on file in Archives and History Department at Rhodes Memorial Hall, Atlanta, GA. Deed Book "CD" page 105, Franklin Co. Records, George A. Pace to John Haley.

The children of Alfred G. and wife Melvina Pace were:

1. Charles Franklin  ) twins  
2. Edward Layfette  )
3. James Herman
4. George
5. Carrie
6. Melvina Eudora
7. Eugenia Elesif
8. Richard
9. Harriet
10. 
11. 

Original Wilkes County has been divided into Crawford, Taliaferro, Hart, Warren, Greene, Hancock, Elbert and others. This might be useful in trying to decide where "they" moved to and from where and "why" the impending motive which caused the families to migrate from Virginia and South Carolina was that they could sell their lands in the developed communities and buy advantageously in newer settlements in North Carolina and Georgia. Then, in 1782, Georgia gave bounty grants of land, 287½ acres (more to Officers) to Revolutionary soldiers to induce them to settle in Georgia.
In 1803, Georgia ceded to the United States all the territory lying between the Chattahoochee and the Mississippi Rivers for the sum of one and a quarter million dollars with the agreement to extinguish the titles to all lands held by the original tribes of Indians. This agreement, although not consumated until 1825, opened large tracts of land for settlers.

In 1822, Pike County was carved out of this territory. The land was distributed by lot to citizens of the older counties. Many who drew these lots came early and settled upon their new possessions. They often extended their acreage by buying grants to adjacent lots from those who drew but did not care to occupy the land. There are no records to show the names of all of these early settlers, but John J. Culpepper is named as one of those who helped to organize Pike County.

Since Alfred G. Pace was not born until 1810, he would have been only 12 years old when Pike County was made. John J. Culpepper did come to settle in Pike in 1822. The Culpepper’s, three generations of them, went from South Carolina to Pike County, Georgia.

Melvina Giggers, mother, who married Giggers. Joseph Richard Culpepper was the son of Charles Culpepper who was the son of Lord Culpepper who came to America from Ireland and moved to South Carolina. This is a rough estimate and may not be correct, but it does place the Culpepper and Gigger families in Pike County, Georgia and it has been established that Alfred G. Pace married Melvina Gigger, who descended from the Culpepper family, after he came to Pike County.

The Alfred G. Pace family moved from Pike County, Georgia in 1848, to Tate County, Mississippi. Evidently Melvina Pace came back to Georgia to visit her people, because her third child, James Herman Pace, was born on September 4, 1855, in Zebulon, Pike County, Georgia. The Paces moved considerably, from Mississippi to Arkansas, then back to Mississippi.

SUPPLEMENTARY DATA

Having traced the Paces (through the few remaining records left in the counties in which the families lived) from James City, Virginia, "Pace's Paines" then to "Buckland" and "Maycock" in Charles City, Virginia, from there we found them in Prince George County, Virginia (carved from Charles City in 1702).
They remained in Prince George at least until 1718, after that date we follow Richard⁴ (Richard³ and Mary; George² and Sarah; Richard¹ and Isabella) into the County of Surry. He had married about 1699 (a daughter of one of the noted Poythress family) Miss Rebecca Poythress of Prince George County, still in Virginia.

Ref: "Coats of Arms in Virginia" also Ref: "William & Mary Quarterly Magazine" Vol. 1, page 112-121. Lists of families in Virginia entitled to bear Arms. Instances of the use of Arms in Virginia previous to 1776. This list contains the following family: POYTHRESS, Arms on tomb in Blandford Churchyard (Note: Blanford Church is in Petersburg, Prince George County, Virginia).

This Richard Pace IV (who married Rebecca Poythress) was married in Prince George County about 1699, because his eldest son, Richard V was born there in 1700.

In 1718/19 and in 1724, Richard IV bought land in Surry County, Virginia, and is called "Richard Pace of Surry" although that is not of record. If he ever lived in Surry it was never recorded. He gave this Surry land to his daughters and their husbands.

In 1706, this same Richard Pace patented land in Albemarle County, North Carolina, but he allowed it to lapse. In 1719/20 none of this Richard Pace IV family had left VA. In 1720 he moved to North Carolina. He moved all of his family (except the son, Richard, who was born 1700, who remained in Virginia), to Chowan Precinct, Albemarle County, North Carolina where he died in 1738. That is, he died in Bertie County which had been made out of Albemarle.

The son, Richard Pace V (who was called Richard III) born in 1700, married in 1723, Miss Elizabeth Cain of Prince George County, both of them being of Prince George. Richard and his family stayed in Virginia until 1758 when he moved with his family into South Carolina.

Virginia does not come into the lives of this bunch of the Paces any more after Richard and his wife, Elizabeth Cain, and his children, all 13 of them and many of them married, left the old ancestral Virginia home. They did not move directly into South Carolina, but stopped for a while in Northampton, North Carolina, where Richard had brothers and sisters living.

This Richard Pace is recorded in Northampton County, North Carolina in 1743/4. An old Manuscript history in existence
written by his grandson states: "He moved from the Roanoke River about 1758, when his youngest child was about 7 or 8 years old, and settled about 12 miles northeast from where Augusta, Georgia now stands, on the South Carolina side of the Savannah River. He stayed there a few years until 1761, then he went to where his son-in-law, Cox, lived in the "High Hills of the Santee" then shortly returned to his former home.

NOTE: "His former home" was Edgefield, S. C. which is just across the river from North Augusta.

It is presumed that it was when his wife died that he went to live with his daughter, Mrs. Cox. Evidently the old home was broken up, because his son, Charles, shortly afterwards moved over into Georgia.

Richard Pace petitioned for land in South Carolina in 1757, which was granted in 1762. He also received another grant in 1773. He died in 1778/9, some say 1777.

One of his descendent's wrote: "The Richard Pace and wife Elizabeth Cain Pace, could have died about or just about the outbreak of the Revolutionary War, and are buried some 16 or so miles from Augusta, Georgia in South Carolina.

Charles Pace, born about 1728, third child of Richard and Elizabeth (Cain) Pace married first a Miss Garnett, second to a Miss Shackleford. He moved to South Carolina with his father and died about the time of the Revolutionary War. The descendants differ as to where he died, whether in South Carolina or in Georgia.

In 1765, Charles Pace applied for land in Georgia. He said he had been sixteen months in the Province, but had no land, that he had a wife, a child and one negro and he asked for 150 acres on the Savannah River.

The Columbia County, Georgia records state that Charles Pace died in 1748 and many items relating to two of his sons, Dredzil and Silas. Columbia County was formed in 1790, from Richmond. Richmond was formed 1777 from St. Paul's Parish (which was part of the "ceded lands"). Evidently Charles Pace received land in the "ceded lands" or "St. Paul's Parish" afterwards named Richmond County. He must have died in Georgia.

The ceded lands included all of present Wilkes, Elbert, Lincoln and Oglethorpe and parts of Greene, Warren and
Madison Counties. After the Indians ceded their lands to the State of Georgia, his Excellency James Wright, Governor of the Province of Georgia appointed a court of Land Commissioners to issue the ceded land, later formed into Wilkes County: 100 acres were sold to the head of a family, 50 more acres for each child and wife, etc. This was in 1773.

Now, Charles Pace had been in Georgia since 1764, but his brother, Drury Pace, did not come over from South Carolina and take up the 100 acres allowed in 1774.

Georgia History begins in Virginia. The American origin of the first Georgians is largely to be found in the old Virginia records. We must begin with the London Company. The first Virginia Company was organized in 1606. This Virginia Company thought its strength lay in its merchant element. The patent gave all needed commercial powers with a free hand. But King James withheld the sovereign power and this business venture of the First Virginia Company was a chronic failure, though it lived for 18 years.

It was soon clear that a prosperous colony could only be obtained by fee simple land tenure and could not be governed by a corporation resident in London, but must have a share in self government. It was soon seen that in 1624, Virginia entered on the truly formative period of its growth. The Charter was revoked in 1624. The stockholders, when it went into liquidation, received lands for their investment and the foundations of the immense landed estates of Virginia were laid by the shareholders of the London Company, and it was in this way that so many of these people were found in Virginia in its early history.

One of the most noted families who settled in Virginia at this early period was that of Poythress. A descendent of the immigrant was Rebecca Poythress (who married in 1698 or 1699, to Richard Pace of Prince George County).

The Poythress immigrant was Francis Poythress I, who came to Virginia in 1636. The Arms are on the tomb in Blandford Churchyard, Petersburg, Virginia.

Roger Drayton, who sold Capt. Maycock’s plantation in 1696, died about 1715, leaving a minor child and Peter and Francis were guardians of his children.

Thomas Poythress was Burgess for Charles City County, Virginia and died in 1724. In 1718, Francis Poythress
Sr., deeded land to Richard Pace in Prince George County. In 1718, Richard Pace had been married to Rebecca, daughter of Francis Poythress, about 19 years and had several children, among whom was Richard Jr. (born 1700). The family had not then moved out of Virginia into North Carolina. Rebecca (Poythress) Pace however, died in Bertie County, North Carolina after 1736. The Poythress family remained in Virginia.

Charles Lowe married Elizabeth Shackleford. Charles Lowe was the grandson of Richard Sr., and Rebecca (Poythress) Pace. Charles Pace moved with his parents (Richard Jr. and Elizabeth Cain) Pace to South Carolina in 1758 or 1759 and in 1764 moved into Georgia. In 1715, Charles Pace was granted land in what is now Richmond County, Georgia. Three generations later his great grandson, Alfred G. Pace, was born in Elbert County, Georgia in 1810. (Alfred G., James, Silas, Charles).

SHACKELFORD

Tracing families from whom spring the Pace ancestors of Alfred G. Pace, families of note in Virginia we come to the Shackelfords. The Shackelfords descend from the noted Gloucester Co., Virginia family of Robins when Elizabeth Robins married James Shackelford there in 1695.

Ref: "Abstract of Virginia Land Patents" Vol. 2, "Virginia Magazine" page 1189. ROBINS: John Robins, the elder, died on his voyage to Virginia. His son, John Robins, the younger, settled in Elizabeth City County, and patented several tracts of land in various parts of the Colony, among them (in 1624) of 2,000 acres in Gloucester County, where he resided the first few years of his life, and where the place of his residence required the name "Robin's Place" which it still retains.

He was a member of the House of Burgesses from Elizabeth City, 1646 and 1649 (Henning) and a justice of that County in 1652 (York Records). He appears to have been twice married, first to Dorothy ____, and secondly in or before 1638, to Alice ______, according to an Act passed in 1734 for docking the entail on part of the lands inherited from him (Ref: Henning, Vol. IV, page 461).

John Robins, late of "Robin's Neck" in the County of Gloucester, deceased, was in his lifetime, seized in fee simple of 2,000 acres of land with the appurtenances lying and being in the Parish of Elizabeth City, in the County of Elizabeth City, and so being thereof seized, did make his
last Will and Testament in writing, bearing date 22 of November in the year of our Lord, 1695.

From the same authority, it is known that he had issue:

1. Christopher
2. William
3. Thomas
4. Daughter
5. Daughter

Christopher Robins, the eldest son, left two children, Anne who married Robert Freeman and Elizabeth who married James Shackelford. This same James Shackelford who married Elizabeth (daughter of Christopher Robins) was the same generation as Richard Pace and Rebecca Poythress Pace and apparently the same age.

John Robins married 1638, Christopher Robins born about 1639, Elizabeth Robins, born about 1669 or 1670, married James Shackelford—and compared with the Pace family, Richard Pace was born 1638, (married Rebecca Poythress) born ca 1775, married about 1669, died 1738 in North Carolina.

The grand daughter of James Shackelford, Eliza or Elizabeth Shackelford, married Charles Pace, the grandson of Richard and Rebecca (Poythress) Pace. We find Shackelfords living in Elbert County, Georgia.

In support of the foregoing statements, descendents of Martin Fisher say that he married "the grand daughter of one of the Shackelford's of the Old Dominion." Thomas Pace witnessed the will of Martin Fisher in 1699.

THE NEWSOME (NUSOM) FAMILY


A family of Newsom or Newsom was long resident in Surry and the adjoining counties. The Will of William Newsom, son of the patentee, was dated June 10 and proved in Surry, Sept. 1, 1691. He gave to his son, William, the plantation and land in Redneck and directed that it should never be sold; to son, John, the plantation bought of Wm. Harris, where the testator then lived; sons Robert, one negro and Thomas one negro, daughter Elizabeth one negro and a horse; and daughter Anne a negro. Residue of the estate divided between wife and children. Sons William and John and Wife, Ann, Exec. Friends Francis Mason and Robert Ruffin as overseers.

The Newsome and Pace families were neighbors in Virginia, they were neighbors after they came to North Carolina. When Richard Pace Jr. patented land in South Carolina it was jointly with Peter Newsome. Solomon was the father of Mary Newsome (wife of Silas Pace). The two families came to Georgia together, and intermarried here, and from this family of Solomon Newsome finally descended Alfred G. Pace.


There is a deed which shows that Richard Pace came from Prince George County, Virginia into North Carolina about 1758 or 1759, as the family record shows. This is Richard Pace Jr., who married Elizabeth Cain. He is Alfred Pace's
direct ancestor and the father of Charles Pace (who married Miss Shackelford). From North Carolina they went to South Carolina and then came from Edgefield County, across the River to Georgia.

The deed referred to runs as follows: Ref: Edgecombe Co., N. C., Deed Book "Q", page 36, September 1759:

To all to whom presents shall come, I, Thomas Drake of Edgecombe County in the said Province, planter, send greetings knowye that the said Thomas Drake for and in consideration of the sum of thirty-five pounds currency money of Virginia to me in hand paid by Richard Pace of Virginia in Prince George County in Brandon Parish, the receipt whereof I do hereby acknowledge and myself fully satisfied, contented and paid, have given granted sold conveyed and confirmed and do by these presents fully freely and absolutely give grant bargain sell convey and confirm unto said Richard Pace a plantation and tract of land containing by estimation one hundred and fifty acres to be the same more or less situate lying and being in the County of Edgecombe on the north side of Fishing Creek beginning on the east side of Beaver Dam Swamp., etc. Recorded September 1759.

Charles Pace (son of this Richard) asked for grant of land in Georgia in 1764.
AT THE SIGN OF THE CREST
PACE

Ref: "Burke's General Armory" Page 769, Coat of Arms of Pace:

A boy went out in armour, perhaps for a friendly tourney, perhaps to meet an enemy of his country. Another boy went out in the same style armour. Both faces were covered with the vizors of their steel helmets -- how were their superior officers to tell them apart?

Because of this emergency, Coat-of-Arms became a necessary part of military and sports equipment, and later were used as seals for legal documents, and as badges at social functions -- and always as the honor insignia in the family dwelling.

Coats-of-Arms were a family possession. Even the censustaker, for the "Visitations" recorded the family "Coat-of-Arms," and that identified the branch of the family. The seal with the Arms cut in it, identified their legal papers, and was used by our early settlers all along the coast to Virginia.

COLOR CODE: Verticle stripes, red, plain white, silver, horizontal stripes, blue verticle and horizontal stripes crossed would be sable, but as the birds are so small, they have been made black, which of course is sable. (The Color-code was standardized by Queen Elizabeth).

This is the main reason why the study of family Coats-of-Arms is so interesting --no two alike -- each one belonging to his own family, and inherited till "Kingdom Come!"

In the picture, the color code, which Queen Elizabeth standardized for all countries, is:

-157-
dotted surface for gold, fine vertical lines for red.

The cross denotes Crusader ancestry. It is a symbol of sorrow, sacrifices and suffering. The mounds denote the endurance of the bearer of the cross.

The finger ring or annulet is the emblem of fidelity, the first on record to be given as an honor, though not on a Coat-of-Arms, is the ring that Pharaoh gave Joseph for his faithful service during the seven "lean years" years." Romans wore a certain ring as a sign of knighthood; it is used in coronation services; and one thinks instantly of the wedding ring, also an emblem of fidelity. On Coats-of-Arms, faithfulness to one's country, in service and loyalty; to the sovereign; to superior officers; to duties in civil service -- for such faithfulness the annulet was granted, and greatly prized.

As was mentioned before, the anchor had a religious significance, and a writer of over a century ago says that it typified succour in extremity, and is the Christian emblem of hope. Richard I once bore a device with an anchor, and the motto, "Christus Duce" -- Christ the leader.

The lion is the king of beasts, and is emblematical of service to his country and deathless courage.

Birds are always considered messengers of cheer and hope, and granted to those who have carried such messages, or whose lives exemplify cheer.

NOTES FOR SEARCHERS, NOTE 26. VISITATIONS.

A request has come for a note about the visitations in England. This has nothing to do with churches, as the word sometimes applies. It was a census. (I don't know whether the "visitor" asked what your income was or not). He not only recorded the names of the people in the family, but took or
checked their lineage, AND — their Coat-of-Arms! These visitations established many Coat-of-Arms that would otherwise be practically impossible, as they are linked with the lineage. Usually they are "tricked in" that is, the charges drawn correctly, but the letter only for the color, and sometimes, where two or more charges are the same a sign for this repetition. Sometimes the autograph of the head of the house was taken, and his legal seal, which often included the Arms.

These visitations were printed by the Harleian Society, and indexed. Each county visited had its own volume, thus we ask for the "Visitation of Surrey" etc. when we wish to consult in the libraries -- and most of the best genealogical sections in our country own a set of the Visitations.

You might enjoy excerpts from the preface of one of these books.

Preface to the Visitation of Surrey, 1662-8. The Publications of the Harleian Society established A.D., MDCCCLXXIX. The seal has the words, "The glory of children are their fathers."

"Charles ye second by the Grace of God King of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, etc., to our trusty and Well-beloved Servant Sir Edward Bish, Knight Clarencieux King of Armes of the S.E. etc. -- and to all other our Loving Subjects, Greetings." (Bysshe is another spelling for Bish).

"For as much as God of his great Clemency and Goodness ----. Wee minding our Royall Power and absolute authority to Visit survey and view throughout all our Realm of England as well for a due Order to be kept and observed in all things touching the Office and Duties appertaining to Armes as also for reformacion of divers and sundry Abuses -- for want of Ordinary Visitations surveys---." 

Official copies of the Visitations from different sections were placed in Herald's
College and the British Museum.

As it has never been the custom in this country to "bear Arms" in the sense of which we are speaking, it is with us a privilege to commemorate our ancestors and study into their interesting history by enjoying pictures of their armorial bearings, and just as proper for us to have those of one side of the family as another, and not just that of our own name.

In the other countries it was very common for them to "quarter" the Arms of the different families from whom they were descended. I have seen pictures of 100 and more quarterings.

Coats-of-Arms have a definite language, a special formula, one might call it. A term for each symbol, and for each position of it, and each variation in it. Also there is a formula for the order of the terms used, so that when an heraldic artist reads the blazon, or word-description, he can paint it immediately without error; and one who learns this formula and these terms can picture the Arms in his imagination as he reads, and vice versa, can read the Coat-of-Arms he sees. This is a fascinating study.

Rules of emblazonment are so definite that even an artist skilled in other subjects should not attempt even to copy another picture (as that might not be correct), not to paint from a blazon, unless he has made a special study of emblazoning Arms.

Every symbol and every color have been granted for definite purpose, with a special meaning, and the study of interpretations in itself is most fascinating, leading one into the realms of mythology, history, poetry, art, science, languages, nature-- and human nature.

The color code, used in all countries to represent the colors when Arms are printed in black or white, or carved or engraved where colors can not be used, is as follows:
Silver, plain surface; gold, dotted; red, vertical lines; blue, horizontal lines; green, diagonal from upper right of the shield (your left), to lower left; purple, opposite diagonal lines; black, crossed vertical and horizontal lines.

Color-names are as follows: Silver, argent; gold, or; red, gules; blue, azure; green, vert; purple, purpure.

The fesse is one of nine so-called Honourable Ordinaries, a straight-sided figure one-third the width of the shield, first symbol used to identify men encased in armour. The fesse is the military girdle of honour.

This is the end of Miss Annie Jones manuscript, hand written on three ring notebook paper, 285 pages. At times it was difficult to read, handwriting faded, and a note written on the manuscript said that she was 80 years of age when she wrote this manuscript which was given to the Pace Society many years ago. Miss Annie Jones died in August 1951. I have tried as best I know how to transcribe exactly as she wrote, and if I missed something along the way, please forgive me. New evidence has been discovered since the time of Miss Jones, but her work is quite a contribution and a wealth of information to the Pace family seeking to find their place in this line.

Our thanks to Miss Annie Jones for her efforts and contribution of information to the Pace family, the Ramspect family and other Georgia families. Her handwritten manuscripts can be found at the Decatur Historical Society in Decatur, Georgia (1995).
In its entirety, the Barnabas Pace Letter, his account of the Pace family, written by Barnabas Pace from 1844-1850. He was born 1787 or 1789, followed by notes by Maude McLure Keily attempting to explain statements that are not clear as to other works and records. The original letter has long been lost, so questionable material can not be checked as transcription errors. The Barnabas Pace Letter was submitted by Mrs. L. C. Warren and was notarized. Miss Annie Jones alludes to Uncle Barney and mentions "a family manuscript" which is the Barnabas Pace Letter.

My dear Son:

I have for several years intended to write you a history of the Pace family so far as I have been personally acquainted with or have had it handed down to me traditionally by older branches of the family. And I wish you to keep up the history, and at your death turn it over to any one of your descendants, if any, or to a descendant of mine, if he bears the name of Pace. I wish you to enjoin it on him to keep the same up his time and turn it over in the same way with the same directions. Also, to let the box that accompanies this history, the old book, and my letters, be they many or few, be kept together and on no account let them be separated.

My great-great-grandfather, William (Richard²) came to America from England and was one of the first settlers of Virginia, and purchased land on the Roanoke. Whether he married in the colony or brought his wife with him from England, tradition does not say. His brother Thomas came with him to the colony but was never married, so that all the stock of Paces sprang from Richard Pace that are known in America. (NOTE: Here Uncle Barney gets his Richards and Williams confused), but read on! (2)

William (Richard²) had two sons which were called William and Thomas. Both married and had sons and daughters and my grandfather, Richard Pace, was the son of William Pace, and was born in the year 1700 in Virginia on the patrimonial estate of his father and grandfather and he was the
oldest son. In his 23 year he married Elizabeth Cain, who was also of English parents.

My grandfather had nine sons and four daughters: James, his eldest son, married a French lady and raised a numerous family, especially sons, that were all grown when the Revolutionary War commenced when they all took up arms against their country, three of them bearing a commission in the British army. When peace was made, their property was all confiscated and the old man and his boys were all compelled to leave the country, and we were never able to hear anything of the family until the year 1828. (3)(4)

Your Uncle Richard was at Augusta and saw a grandson of James Pace's who told him that the family, on leaving the United States, went to Halifax, where they then resided, what of them were alive, many of the old ones being long since dead. One of James Pace's sons, Samuel, was a cripple from birth, and bore arms on neither side, stayed in Georgia but died early in life, and left one son, James, that I have seen and who is long since dead, and left behind him a family of sons and daughters. (5)

The second son was Silas Pace, also a Tory, though from principle, and not for plunder. He married a Miss Mary Newson, a Tory's daughter, and had Tory brothers, murdering, plundering Tories. The opinion of your grandfather was that Silas was led away by his wife and was not a Tory from principle so much as being led away by his wife. He raised a numerous family of sons and daughters, and died in good old age, and his remains were buried in Edgefield District, South Carolina, near Savannah River, 25 miles above Augusta. As well as I remember, he died in 1796. The names of his sons were John, William, Silas and David, all dead. (6) (7)

Third son was Charles Pace, who married a Garnett, and had only one child, a son Dredzil, and died about the commencement of the Revolutionary War. His widow I have seen. She married a second time to a Mr. Shackleford, and had sons and daughters. Dredzil Pace, his son, lived to be about 55 years old, had two sons, Thomas and Dredzil, amassed a large estate, was a man of fine appearance, six feet four inches high, esteemed by his friends and hated by his enemies, and his rule or motto was, "make money honestly if you can, but if not, anyhow."

His two sons he brought up to the law, but turning their attention to sporting, fun and frolic more than the
law, soon sank their patrimonial estate and died in the prime of life leaving widows and orphans. Thomas was a man of bravery, ranked high among men of honor. His first duel was fought with Lieutenant Bee, of U.S. Army, near Fort Hawkins, now Macon, and wounded his antagonist in the knee, and the ball of Bee cutting a lock of hair near his ear. His second duel was with a Mr. Dent, that was raised up with him. Many hours they spent in fun and frolic together, practiced often together under the direction of the old man Dent with the weapons used by duelist. They met near Augusta, where Hamburg now stands, fought with pistols, distance ten steps, the first fire Pace shot Dent through the heart.

His third duel was with Col. Carr, just below Savannah. They fought with rifles, but the seconds had agreed to manage the matter in such a way as to save life if possible. The distance was thirty steps, posted with their backs together, with rifles erect. But the individual appointed to give the word did it so slowly, as agreed upon by the seconds, they bringing their rifles to a level and waiting for the word, (as anticipated) both fires, Carr’s ball passing through Pace’s heel betwixt the heel string and ankle bone, Pace’s ball entering the ground just by Carr’s foot, shooting some six inches lower than Carr.

Fourth son was Dredzil, who in early life following grading with the Cherokee Indians, took to himself an Indian wife, had two sons by her, and died in the prime of life. One of his sons I can remember. Father and old Uncle Barnabas raised him, but he was an Indian, and never seemed satisfied, and finally went to the nation and moved off to the White River, with the first that went off. (9)

Fifty son was Thomas. Lived to be nearly sixty years old, was never married, but was on the eave of marrying when he died, to the widow of Col. Leroy Hammond, nearly his own age, and at his death made a deed of gift of all his property which was considerable, to her. But the old lady gave up all the property, which was divided among his brothers and sisters. Like all batchelors, he was one of your close, stingy men, and had but few friends, died unregretted, and lies buried five miles from Augusta, near Savannah River, with no stone or monument to mark the place. (10)

Sixth son was Drury, of whom I shall not speak now, intending to devote a chapter to him before I close.

-164-
Seventh and youngest son was Barnabas, who lived to be nearly one hundred years. His first wife was Agnes Aycock, by whom he had four sons, Leroy, Thomas, Parris and Bazil, all married and raised families, also three daughters, all married and two had families. His second wife, Polly Casey, by whom he had three sons and two daughters, John Noel, Dredzil, Mazy and Patsy. All married, raised and are raising families. John is a Baptist preacher at this time, living in Baker County, if alive. (11)

I feel that I should do injustice to my old Uncle, were I to stop here and say no more about him. The first time I ever saw him was in the winter of 1798 and never shall I forget his looks and actions on that occasion. Though he was in his 52nd year, he was a perfect picture of health, walking as nimble and light as a youth of 18, beating my two older brothers running with ease. He was a small man, weighing about 120 pounds, black and sleek as an Indian's was his hair, large Roman nose, quick, keen, piercing eyes, pleasant countenance, never wishing to offend or to be offended at trifles.

He early took up arms in defense of his country's rights, was a Whig of the true stamp, determined to range the hills of his country free from British oppression, or be buried in the attempt. Could you have seen, my son, the sparkle of his eye, the animation of his countenance, as he told over his sufferings, and the many narrow escapes he passed through by day and by night, and how impossible it was for him to keep his seat, throwing his hands, saying as it were, here the enemy were found, thus and thus, there were the continental, here the militia, here I stood, and there stood brother Drury, there that and the other officer, the firing of first attack was made here, his countenance glowing as if the reality was before him.

In a moment as though looking over the battlefield, after the battle was over, he would throw himself in his chair, remain silent for a while, his countenance resuming its placid sweetness. At another time this and thus went the battle, he would say, rising again as before described. Thus he would go on for hours at a time. My son, could you have seen him, as I have often done, you would have held him in veneration and would have been proud that you were his near kin and that the same blood ran its course in your veins as I was.

In early life he joined the Baptist Church, was an humble follower of the meek and lowly Jesus, died in the
triumph of faith, and is gone home to glory, where I hope to see him in glory. He was a man that was worthy of imitation. He amassed property sufficient for him and his family's use. This motto was strictly attended to by him, believing that in this, the art of living lies, to want no more than may suffice, and make that little do. And having food and raiment he was content. Permit me here to say that of the four daughters I know but very little. One of them married a Mr. Cox whom I have seen. He was a man of fine appearance, of good property, lived in South Carolina, near the high hills of Santee. Another daughter married a Mr. O'Daniel, and had two daughters whom I have seen. Another married a Mr. Arthur Fort, had two sons, Owen and Arthur, and several daughters, of whom I know nothing, only one of them married a Spurlock. Dr. Tomlinson Fort of Milledgeville and Judge Moses Fort of Twiggs County, are sons of Arthur Fort. Owen Fort's family moved down to Florida, near the line of Florida. Two sons, Richard and Noel and a (12) daughter I know nothing of, likely died in early life.(13,14)

But it seems strange to commence a history of the parents and give the history of the children first, but so I have done. I now shall again take up the history of my grandfather, Richard Pace. I have told you that he was born in 1700, and that he married Elizabeth Cain, in about the year 1723, where he lived on his father's land on the Roanoke until his youngest child was some seven or eight years old, the lands considerably worn, and hard to get, he mustered all his sons and daughters, sons-in-law and daughters-in-law and moved out and settled within thirteen miles of Augusta, in a N.E. direction (not Augusta then but now) for the whole country was a wilderness at that time, which was about 1758 or thereabouts.(15,16)

Bringing with him some four hundred head of cattle, and a fine stock of horses, and every necessary to make a settlement in the wilderness. Bear, deer, turkeys, buffalo, wild horses, and all species of game were in abundance. Here he lived a few years and the old Cherokee War breaking out in 1761, the family mostly moved back to South Carolina in the same county Uncle Cox remained in. Here they lived two years and then moved back to Savannah River, 25 miles above Augusta, obtained lands and cleared a farm, lived and died, him and grandmother, just before the war. Their remains lie within about 100 yards of the river, awaiting the sound of Gabriel's trump. When he and old grandmother all arise, I hope clothed in a body like the glorious Son of God, though I never saw them, I have a hope to see them in the morning of the resurrection. O my soul here is filled with holy delights. Shall I see grandfather, grandmother,
father, mother, sisters, brothers, uncles and aunts and enjoy heaven and happiness. My heart is ready to burst with joy. Glory, Glory, Even so Come Lord Jesus, Come. (17)

My son, I have seen of the handwriting of my grand­father, he wrote an elegant hand, spelt well and was a man of good English education. I have often heard him spoken of by old men who knew him as a man of good, sound sense, a plain unassuming man, a good citizen, a good neighbor, a kind husband, and as a parent skilled in managing a family and training his children in the pathway of virtue, honesty and economy. He knew how to govern himself and family, and was afearer of God and a worker of righteousness.

I shall now take up the history of my father, DRURY PACE. He was born in October 1745, received a good English education, was six feet and two and one-half inches high, straight built as an Indian, weighing about 180 pounds, strong bodily powers, lean faced, thin Roman nose, complexion a little swathy, coal black straight hair, very thin on his head, eyes dark hazel, rather small, quick in their movements, and when excited in any way he would throw open his eyes in a rather glaring manner, and if angry he would snap his eyes very fast. (18)

In common conversation his voice was soft, words quick and mild, open, pleasing countenance, well calculated to make friends wherever his lot might be cast. He seemed to have the peculiar art of conforming himself to any company so as to make himself an agreeable companion to the rich or poor, wise or ignorant.

In the year 1768, he married Mary Bussey, the daughter of Charles Bussey, who moved from the eastern shore of Maryland and settled on the Savannah River eight miles above Augusta, on the Carolina side (who was also of English stock). Father so far as I have been able to learn, located himself 17 miles above the river, on the lands of his father, where he employed himself in that best of all employments, farming and keeping and raising a large stock of cattle, horses and hogs.

Plenty rewarded his labors, though he had not many of the luxuries of life, he had an abundance of the necess­aries to render him contented. For his amusement game was in abundance, at any time when he wanted a little sport or rest from his labors, he had nothing to do but get his horse and gun, call his dog and ride out in the forest where
it was impossible to go far until the buffalo, bear, wild horses, deer or turkey were to be seen fleeing before him. He was a lover of dogs, but not of the noisy breed called hounds, but of the strong mastiff breed, that was able to contend and more than willing to contend with the bear, or buffalo, or panther, or indeed any animal whatever. Always feeling safe at night or any other time having four or five faithful dogs following him or lying on the same bed. I will here relate an anecdote of Father and his dogs when a lad.

As Grandfather and a numerous family moved out to Savannah River driving a large stock of different kinds, they had struck up camp for the night, built as usual a large fire and collected around it. Where Drury stood or sat, there were his dogs close beside him (for dogs love fire as well as men) which soon produced a grumbling sound around the fire at Drury and his dogs. First one kicked dogs and then another. Drury caught up a chunk of fire and went about a hundred yards from the camp, and soon a large fire was seen blazing, and Drury and his dogs enjoying the comforts of a good fire unmolested and alone. For sooner would he camp by himself than for his dogs to stand shivering in the cold or be kicked and cuffed by any person.

Just about daylight he awoke and a large steer was in the act of taking a close view of him and his dogs as they lay snoring on the ground. Mischief flashed in his mind, in a moment he eased off his hunting shirt (boys, my son, in those days did not wear a plaited bosom shirt nor ruffles, not seldom a coat of any sort, much less a cloth coat), but as I have said, a hunting shirt, or coarse strong homespun, linzey woolzy kind of stuff dyed black, fringed off in style around the tail and on the shoulders and the sleeves just about the hand.

And what would you think when I tell you that the fringe was made by taking a piece of the same cloth about as wide as your hand and ravelling one edge about half its width, sewing the unravelled or straight side to the shirt, letting the ravel hang gracefully down in a decent fringe. You need not laugh for many such a shirt have I worn myself.

The shirt was cut like a morning gown, opening before, coming down a little below the waistband of the breeches as they were then called. Notice also that the waistband of the breeches went around the waist which gave the name. They wore no galluses or suspenders, I should have said, in those days. (I am sure the name should be in these
modern times be called stomach band, from the fact of its going around the stomach), and threw it at the steer, thinking to give him a fright. But, strange mishap, the sleeves of his shirt fell precisely over the steer's horns, who threw up his head in a fright, broke like old Nick after him, bellowing as he went. The whole drove became frightened. Away they all went, helter skelter. Three days were lost in collecting the drove, and some they never got. And Father never got his shirt, but got abused a plenty.

But to return to the history of Father, he was happy as a man could be. Mother blessed him with two sons and a daughter. The dark clouds of war began to hang heavy over his beloved country. He long had enjoyed freedom in the true sense of the word, and did not hesitate a moment to inquire what he should do, but took up his gun, leaving mother and three children in the hands of his God, united himself with the armies of his country, Whigs as then called, in defense of the rights of man.

Almost all of his neighbors and two of his brothers were Tories, and he soon found there was no place of safety for him but in the tented field. Early in the war he was appointed Captain by Governor Rutledge of South Carolina. His neighbors sought his life, Tory officers hunted after him, plans were laid to entrap him, many a hard fought battle was he in, many hair breadth escapes did he pass through, but God, as he often said, brought him safely through them all. Never suffered the enemy's ball to touch him only twice, once passing through his hat on his head, at another time cutting him slightly on his shoulder.

Once, as I have often heard him and Mother tell, he was obliged to own the protection of Almighty God. The war was about closed, Cornwallis was taken, and it was the received opinion the war was over. Whigs became more bold and daring, poor Tories began to hide in swamps and caves and to scatter like sheep without a shepherd. Many of them deserved to die, and whom the Whigs had sworn to kill.

Confiscation was spoken of by the Whigs by way of retaliation, for much property had they plundered and destroyed. Many poor and unoffending Whigs had they cut to death. Father was looked for at home when four of his neighbors, poor Tories, but not of the baser sort, came to see Mother and get her when Father did come home to say to him that they concealed themselves in a cave, describing the place so that Father could find them, begging Father come to the cave where they stayed, and bring them in
and give his protection, and if possible, keep them from being murdered by the Whigs. Father sure enough came home, Mother told him the mournful tale of the four poor Tories, adding her own entreaties and begging for their lives. Father next morning early set out to the place designated, which was about eight miles. When getting in about two miles, he hears a little way before him several guns fired, and believed it was the slogun of war. He galloped on, keeping a sharp lookout.

He soon comes up with a scouting party of Whigs, and learned from them that they were fired upon by four Tories, as they believed, and that they had escaped by jumping into a mill pond hard by, swimming across. The Whigs fired many guns, but to no effect. Father then told his business, they went to the cave, the sign was fresh, but they were gone. It was then give up by all it was a scheme laid to kill father. The four men I had seen, and seen in Father's house. Their names were William Cox, Christopher Cox, Allen Robertson and Thomas Robinson. You would ask how could he forgive them, God knows, my son, but he did do it, and was long a member of the church with them.

It is needless to run over his battles and suffering. Suffice it to say he suffered hunger, cold, ruined a fine constitution, wasted much of his time and property in defense of his country's rights. Often have I heard Mother tell of his coming home lousy and almost naked, and that the lice had so eaten his shoulders that they were literally raw. And she took his rags of clothes and burned them up.

My son, I have often thought, could we, or were we able to make a calculation of the amount of treasure expended, lives lost, blood spilled, and whole amount of human suffering, to plant and water the tree of liberty, as dear as we prize it, has cost so much as it is worth. The tears and groans of fathers, mothers, sisters, brothers, and poor, helpless orphans, my soul is made to exclaim, "Lord, what is man, that Thou art mindful of him."

My son, let it be settled in your heart, that the bare privilege of being free, to buy, to sell and get gain, never can compensate or return anything like payment. But Glory to God, the church of the Lord Jesus Christ found a resting place and a home, the gospel had free access in every quarter. Instead of priests or curates collecting tithes or tenths, or collecting their dues in tobacco, as in Patrick Henry's day in Virginia, God was pleased to raise up able ministers of the New Testament, clothed with zeal.
as with a garment, that did preach the gospel of the
kingdom, and many hundreds were brought to the knowledge
of the truth as it is in Jesus Christ, and have gone
home to heaven to immortal glory, not for a day, nor for
a month, for year, but to last forever and ever, yes
through the never ending ages of eternity.

My son, with this view of the subject, I sometimes
think Father, yea, Grandfather, will be amply satisfied in
the morning of the resurrection, when they shall see Jesus,
arrayed in glory, with all his saints and among that number
I have this morning a lively hope that Father will see all
his children (but one, and for him I have a hope) many
grandchildren and great grandchildren, friends and acquaintances,
all in the likeness of the glorious Son of God with
crowns on their heads, heirs and joint heirs with the Lord
Jesus Christ.

My son, I do believe that all things have, do and will
work together to the lover and server of God, who are the
called according to his purpose in Christ Jesus before the
world began. Think you that Father will then say that
liberty cost too much? No, my son, it has cost nothing
compared to the glory that shall be revealed in the last
time.

Dear Billy, though I commenced to write you a history
of your ancestors, you must permit me often make digressions
to suit myself. I design for it not only to contain inform-
ation, but instruction in righteousness, and if possible,
speak when I am dead and gone.

Your Grandfather joined the free mason lodge in early
life, and at the close of the war turned his attention to
his farming, and by industry and economy was always able to
assist the poor and needy. Never did he shut his hand when
solicited, or when the calls of poverty or distress presented
themselves before him. God rewarded his labors and blessed
him with plenty. Father was always opposed to slavery, he
thought it was in his power to have bought slaves, yet he
never bought but one. Mother's father gave him two negro
girls when she was married, which he raised, and the negro
he bought was the husband of the oldest girl. This he did
only for the satisfaction of the girl. In his heart he
believed slavery wrong, and being in possession of that
belief, his conscience would not suffer him to treat them
only as children, and in doing this, he was more of a slave
to them than they were to him. Impossible for him or any
man to make profit off of slaves that treat them as human
beings.

-171-
My son, I have a reason for naming to you that Father was a mason. When I was in Covington, in the winter of 1843, your brother and many others attended a mason lodge one of the nights I stayed in Covington. Next morning Columbus rather jeeringly observed that the church to which I belonged, meaning the old Primitive Baptist, did not permit their members to join the mason lodge, and that they would turn them out for joining, or sitting with the lodge, observing at the same time that all other churches permitted their members to join the lodge, and rather seemed to wish me to give my reason for the course we pursued.

I made him no reply at that time, but now shall give my reasons. I am apprized, my son, of one thing, the poor old Baptist have been and are at this time much blamed by other denominations for their doctrine, and because they will not mix and mingle with them in many things. And here I would just observe, as I cannot in the bounds of this history enter into a labored defense of the grounds occupied by us a denomination, that the Word of God nowhere gives any authority for a mason lodge, the sign, grip, password is not given in God's word, and I nowhere am able to find the different degrees, such as apprentice, fellow craft or Master, the oath administered, and the whimsical ceremonies observed in a lodge with many things observed by masons we believe are unscriptural. And we defy any master mason to point out to us any act, rule or ordinance that is any benefit to man in any way that the same is not taught in God's word as the duty of church members.

Also, the emblem of masonry has always been to me as the images used by the Roman Catholics, they may for aught I know be of service to masons and Catholics to remind them of their duties to God and man, but not so with the servants of God on whose heart the law of his God is written. He needs no representation such as square, compasses or plumb line to aid his senses, God's spirit working with his Spirit is amply sufficient to guide him in all the ways of truth and righteousness.

The Commission given to the Apostles was to go and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, Son and Holy Ghost, not conferring degrees of masonry, but baptizing them all believers, not rejecting the blind, lame or deformed, or any that have any impediment of body in any way as do masons.

Again I have been personally acquainted with many men that were masons joining the Baptist church that no more
sat in the lodge or sought to be known as a mason, but your brother would say no wonder, when the church rules prohibit-ed their doing so. This, my son, is a mistake, their rules do not prohibit but their religion does.

There is no rule or church order that does or ever did prohibit. Here you would say why does not the religion of other denominations do the same. I would just say my son, that I have often thought there was surely a difference in the religion of old hard shelled Baptists and that of other denominations.

Somehow they don't feel alike, talk alike, pray alike, preach alike, read alike, or understand or believe alike. A very singular people indeed, but my son, so were Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, old Elisha, nay all the men of God.

The Apostles were also very singular men, so was the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ a very singular man in the eyes of the world. And, oh my son, the Christians in all ages of the world, have been singular, very singular men from the world, so much so that they have been hated and despised —-thousands have been put to death in every form, what for? Their singularity, their singularity. Yes, my son, if you would be a friend and servant of God you would be an enemy of the world, and the world an enemy to you. The christian must obey, for to obey is better than sacrifice, and to hearken than the fat of rams, and the command is "Come ye out from among them," (the world) "my people, and be ye separate," saith God.

Jesus said to Nicodemus, "Ye must be born again." Believe it my son, so must you if you would inherit heaven or happiness. This done, you will become a stranger to the world, and it a stranger to you. My son, I would to God you were begotten of God in Christ Jesus, then I know you would understand what I say.

Your grandfather, my son, joined the Baptist church before my recollection. In my mind I see him this morning leaning on the top of his silver headed cane, his eyes (20) streaming with tears, exhorting his fellow men to cease to do evil, and turn to the Lord who would have mercy, and to our God who would abundantly pardon. My son, your grandfather was esteemed for his many virtues. His company was sought by old and young, and his house was open to the poor and distressed. The ministers of our holy religion often visited him and went away blessing the man and praising their fare. To sum all in a few words, he believed to do good, and could you have seen him when he came to die, as

-173-
I did, you would have exclaimed as Balaam did, "Let me die the death of the righteous, and let my last end be like his." He was violently attacked on Friday with pleurisy, and when he first took his bed he told all the family that he should not rise any more, but should surely die. Mother insisted to send for a doctor, but he told her "No," for he says, "Doctors can do me no good, for I know I shall die." On Monday, being often solicited, he gave his consent to send for the doctor. Dr. Murray, of Augusta, was brought and when he inquired of Father how he was, who replied, "Doctor, I am in a great rack of misery, but one consolation," said he, "Doctor, it will soon be over, and I have hope beyond the grave. My family and neighbors insisted that you should be sent for, and to gratify them I gave my consent, but Doctor, you can do me no good."

"I must die in a few days, I wish you to give no medicine to counteract the disease, it can't be done. I must die, medicine can't save me. But if you can give me ease, Doctor, I should be glad. I wish to die composed and free of pain." The Doctor told him that he saw no symptoms that led him to think he would die, but the thought at least hoped, that he could relieve him. "It won't do, Doctor, I shall die. Many years ago I had the pleurisy and came very near dying. I then was sensible to know that the next attack would carry me off, this is the next and I know I shall die," he said.

I feel authorized to say that the doctor did no more but to relieve or allay his pain, which he happily did. The old man became easy, and we all fondly hoped he was getting better and would recover. Tuesday, Dr. Murray returned, bringing with him Dr. Smett, considered at that time the ablest and most experienced physician in the state, but they still gave no medicine, only to ease. The family and neighbors all thought he was mending, -- he still said he should die.

Thursday he sent for an old Baptist preacher by the name of Tinsley, and when he came, Father made his will, and observed, "Brother Tinsley, I am now ready to die and shall live but a little while, and I wish you to stay with me and preach my funeral, and see that this poor old body is laid decently away. And though I go before, you will soon follow and we shall meet to part no more, Brother Tinsley." (21)

The children were all called in and after exhorting all to meet him in heaven, he bade all goodbye, taking each one of us by the hand. All the time I was standing by the foot of his bed. You in all probability wonder at my recollection, but not quite eleven years old.

-174-
And, dear Billy, never can I forget, no not even his countenance on that occasion. It was heavenly, it was divine. Never from that day up to this have I seen the like but twice and then in the face of your brother, Columbus, once at a camp meeting on Bear Creek when the sight made me tremble like a Belshazzar and likely from the same cause, a sinner against God in heart and practice. The next time at a camp meeting in Covington, again I saw the same in your brother’s face and my senses left me. In a moment my whole soul was filled with a holy rapture. I was standing near the pulpit, and it so happened that no person was in the pulpit at the time. I jumped up into it, how long I exhorted or what I said I never have known nor ever shall. When my feelings abated and my strength was gone I seemed to come to, and the first thing I remembered the congregation was almost all standing up and in a flood of tears. I then remembered I was a Baptist and had no leave to occupy the pulpit and in all probability had said something calculated to wound feelings.

I slipped down out of the stand, inquired of two old friends if I had said or done wrong, feeling if I had to go back in the stand and ask forgiveness of all, but was told that all the wrong done was I quit too soon. I have many times since, praise be to God, felt the same enjoyment of soul. God is good.

But to return to Father, he then turned to Mother, who was standing by all bathed in tears, begged her not to grieve for him, for he observed it had long been her wish to die first and seemed thankful that God had been good in granting him his wishes, for says he, “I leave you a plenty of this world’s goods, and you can enjoy yourself with your children a little while. We shall meet in heaven freed from all cares and troubles to part no more.”

Think you, my son, he ever shed one tear? No, not one, seemed more inclined to laugh than cry, seemed altogether joyous. All the family and neighbors believed he was smartly better, being persuaded by Mother and several neighbors he sat up in bed and ate as much as was necessary and rested well all night and until nine or ten o’clock next day, Friday, when death seized hold of him, all saw he was going very fast. He talked but little more, and wished not to be interrupted, no one speaking to him but Mother and the old preacher spoken of, frequently uttering broken sentences, such as “Oh how I suffer, but Jesus more than this for me,” (at the same time praying for patience in his suffering. “I am going fast, Brother Tinsley, I shall soon be with Jesus,”

-175-
my Saviour, grieve not for me dear brother, Oh wife and children and neighbors, don't grieve. I am only going home where I wish to meet all of you." About ten o'clock at night he called to Brother Tinsley to sit in a chair near his bed, and there he sat, then he said, "I shall soon be gone," directly turning himself on his back, laying his hands on his breast, straightening himself in the bed and gave up the ghost without pain or struggle. Thus died this saint of God in his 56th year.

On Saturday preparation was made for his burial and funeral, the mournful tidings of his death——Sunday morning came and was a beautiful day. A large concourse of people collected from Augusta and the surrounding county at an early hour. The coffin was placed on the opposite side of the house, his feet toward the door out of which it was intended to carry the corpse. The individuals selected to bear the coffin to the place of internment taking their seats on each side, mother taking her seat at the foot surrounded by the aged females of the company selected for that purpose. The venerable preacher taking his seat at the head, the aged men and members of the church placed around him, and the children, four boys on one side and four daughters on the other side just behind the pall bearers. The old family Bible and hymn book lying on the head of the coffin.

All arranged, the aged man of God arose, tears trickling down his aged cheeks, was silent for a few minutes, when he took the hymn book and read slowly through plainly a hymn and sang "Hark from the tombs a doleful sound," to the tune of Old Hundred, when done he fell on his knees in prayer, rising from his knees took the Bible and read his text (which I wish I could remember, but it has left me) and delivered an appropriate discourse, speaking much of Father as a soldier, citizen, and as the humble follower of Jesus, the particulars of his dying moments, exhorting children and neighbors to prepare to meet Father in heaven.

He closed and another aged minister by the name of (22) Savage, arose, made a few remarks and went to prayer. The coffin lid was then removed by Father Tinsley, and the corpse exposed to view and all invited to look at the remains for the last time, singing all the time. When all seemed to have looked, the coffin lid was fastened on, and preparation made to quit the house, which was done, by Father Tinsley going around to the foot, accompanied by the same persons that sat with him. At the same time Mother and her company taking the place Father Tinsley had left. All arose and moved out of the house to the place of internment about 150
yards from the house, under a large persimmon tree, without
noise, whither beside his brother, Thomas Pace, his remains
were interred by friends. Prayer was again made by Father
Tinsley. This was February 1st, 1800. Thus, my son, died
your grandfather, and as I have described, so was he buried.

Many times in my meditations and lonesome hours,
though almost forty-five years ago, it seems as fresh to
my memory as the scenes of but last year. Many things have
made long and lasting impressions on my mind, but nothing
ever passed through my mind or before my eyes to be compared
with the one I have described. I believe this morning God
by his Holy Spirit and a numerous convoy of angels were
there, and that my father went home to glory. Further, that
God was pleased to sanctify that scene to the good of the
whole family and many of those that were present. For one,
I can say that in all my wanderings, and they have been
many, my father and mother, though long gone, would rise
up before me and cause a feeling that I am not able to
describe, a species of awful shuddering, again and again I
would resolve to do better, but my son, if I had ever done
any better it is to be ascribed to the restraining grace of
God.

I shall now speak of my mother's family and of her
especially, as I have said that she was the daughter of
Charles Bussey, who like my great grandfather, was of the
English stock and moved out from the eastern shore of
Maryland in the year 1765, or thereabout, and settled on
Savannah River, 8 or 10 miles above Augusta, Edgefield
District, South Carolina, bringing with him six sons and
my mother, the only daughter, and the youngest in the
family. George, Edward, Charles, Joshua, Malachia and
Thomas, all of whom I have seen. (Note, also Hezekiah
whom he evidently had not seen). They were large, coarse,
boney men (all but Uncle Edward, who like myself and your
Uncle Richard, was very fleshy, weighing near four hundred
pounds, and his fat was the cause of his death) not noted
for their talents but as makers of hog and corn, frequently
I have heard Uncle Thomas say, when an old man, that he
never bought but one and a half bushels of corn in his life
and but few years he had to move his old corn to make room
for the new. (23)

They were all Whigs, and Thomas and Malachia were in
several hard battles, and many skirmishes with the Indians
and Tories. They were none of them to say rich, but all
in good circumstances and were so called in their day,
owning many slaves. Grandfather in early life bought an
African negro girl that lived to the rise of 120 years,
she had 18 children, four boys and 14 girls, and when I was some 25 years old, myself and two cousins made a calculation of the number and there was the rise of 150 and that was at that time Alice and all in the possession of our family, and the Bussey family, none of them ever buying a slave, but Father and Uncle Charles, and they only bought one apiece, who were husbands of their girls. One was plundered by the Tories and never was got or heard of.

Charles Bussey was one among the first Baptist preachers of South Carolina, assisted in and planted many churches, baptized hundreds, assisted in ordaining many preachers, labored much in the ministry, was a man of plain, unassuming manners, had a good English education, but was by no means a man of great talent, speaking after the manner of men, but was great in being good. Often, my son, have I seen him when he came to the house of God the crowd would gather around him, anxious to get hold of his hand, both old and young, and what was remarkable, instead of his countenance becoming animated, or the pleasing smile playing on or in his countenance, often the tears would run down his aged cheeks, and his thanks be lifted to God for his goodness and kindness in sparing them to meet once more at the house of prayer.

What was the noblest trait in his character was that in all he did the honor and glory of God was kept constantly in view, his preaching was worn from the heart, in praying he prayed assisted by the Spirit.

He was the owner of a large farm of first rate bottom land, made large crops of corn and raised a great many hogs, always had corn and bacon to sell, and his price 50 cents for corn and 12 1/2 cents for bacon, high or low. It was often said by corn buyers, let us go down to Egypt to buy corn, meaning old Charles Bussey. His rule in selling was first the poor and then the men of money. He had a large fishery, caught thousands of white shad besides thousands of other fish. Many were the poor that camped around his fishery in the fish season and carried away loads and loads. Uncle Charles Bussey married Penelope Glover, who proved to be a help mate for him. He had 3 sons and 4 daughters, John, Charles and Jeremiah, Lucy, Mary, Nancy and Elizabeth. John was never married but died just as he arrived at manhood. Elizabeth married a Mr. Breedlove, had two children and died about 24 years of age. Charles married a widow, Bugg, of Augusta, who led him a very unhappy life. He lived with her three or four years, had no children, died suddenly, his wife was suspected of poisoning him, but the truth was never known.
Jerry (Jeremiah) was a highminded, honorable man, had many friends, married a Miss Harriet Hightower, a lady that had few equals. For a few years happiness and prosperity attended him, but that enemy of all social happiness, intemperance, brought him to an untimely grave, much to the grief of his brothers and sisters and numerous family connection. (My son, I shall here stop and beg of you in the name of my God, and for you soul's sake and everything you hold dear, avoid intoxicating liquors as you would deadly poison. And the best way is for you to do as you have done so far, touch not, handle not the accursed thing. Here your father prays God to give you grace to help you keep your pledge inviolate until the day of your death).

His wife died a short time before he did, leaving three small children. Lucy married Martin Hitt, a respectable and worthy man. Some of his sons were merchandising a few years ago, if not now, in Augusta. Mary was about my own age, and never married. She took charge of her brother Jerry's children, doing a mother's part by them, and gave them all her property, which with their own left them by their father, made them rich. The last I knew of them they lived in Augusta. (25)(26)

Nancy married a Mr. Dill of Augusta, and as I understand is doing well. I could write you many things of Mother's brothers, but there is such a sameness I deem it uninteresting. They were coarse, plain men, honest and upright in their dealings, raised plenty of corn and bacon, lived coarsely on plenty. They raised large families, took no delight in educating themselves, they neglected the education of their children to their great injury. Some of their daughters did well, but the sons did but little good, but no harm. (27)

Here permit me to say, though the stock of Paces and Busseys is large, I never knew of one being tried for a crime unjustly. Two or three have been accused but were able to prove themselves clear of the charge exhibited against them. My son, today while I am writing, I am in my 57th year and can confidently say that as I look back on the many families of my kin, and other persons that I have known in my journey of life, never have I found one family of no account sons and daughters but that the mother was at fault, nor have I ever known one family of smart brothers and sisters but what the mother was to be praised as a smart woman. Hence, the importance of female education. Again, many more men after marriage take up with their wives people than otherwise. Hence, the importance of a young man marrying a wife of good family, for children
will partake more or less of the faults or virtues of the
kin on the mother's side.

If you would turn your attention historically to the
heathern nations, you would learn that the females are a
degraded part of the nation. What do you hear of the
Mexican female at this time. Do you not hear that conjugal
chastity is not to be found in Mexico? What is the state of
morals among the men? Bad above description. So of all
nations upon earth, where female chastity is not a virtue,
I feel confident from observation of many years, that the
safest way to insure the welfare of the nation is to spare
no pains or money to educate the females. Upon them rests
the early instruction of our children. It surely is
desirable to be able to use good language, and I would not
today give the teaching of a pious, refined mother, in that
respect, for the dictionaries or grammars ever written by
Webster, Walker and Murray.

I shall now give you a hasty sketch of my brothers and
sisters, and their families. My oldest brother was Micajah
and he lived until he was 17 or 18 years old—was killed by
a tree falling on him. The particulars were as follows:
He had been to Uncle Edward Bussey's house to a reaping and
was going home, riding behind a young man by the name of
John Boyd. The wind perfectly still, they got under a
large old dead pine, they heard it crack, both looking up
saw the top broken off, and falling on them. They endeav­
ored to urge the horse forward, but he stopped, Boyd
himself forward in the saddle, and brother throwing himself
back. The tree fell betwixt them, killing the horse and a
snag on the tree ran into brother's breast. And when they
pulled it out, his heart was sticking on the end of it.
Boyd did not come to for several hours, but finally recover­
ed, lived many years, was a Baptist preacher many years,
and finally was drowned in Stephen's Creek in attempting
to cross. (28)(29)

The next oldest was a sister, Nancy, who married Abiah
Morgan, by whom she had two sons and six daughters, who all
married and raised families. Sister Nancy was a small woman
very slim and straight built, a very beautiful woman. She
was of a kind, affectionate disposition, a lover of her
kin and children, died happy in the Lord some twenty years
ago. She made a profession of religion in early life,
and joined the Baptist. Morgan was a coarse, ignorant kind
of a man, a very constant and loud talker. I say I have
heard him talking to a neighbor one clear still morning (30)
near one and a half miles, plain enough to understand many
of his words. He was a hard working man, close and saving,
in many things was a little mean, made some property and married the second time a Mrs. Tompkins, lived a miserable life, and finally he and his wife parted. He is still alive and living in Edgefield District, South Carolina.

Third son was a brother, William, a large, likely man, six feet, two inches high, strong bodily powers and a mind capacious and strong, but being raised just at the close of the Revolution he lacked education. He could read and write but very imperfectly. Sure I am, could he have been blessed with liberal education, he would have been an ornament to society. But few men ever better understood the Scriptures, or had them more at command. He was of the high Calvinistic Order, and nothing afforded him so much satisfaction as disputing with the Arminians on the doctrine of grace. He seemed never to tire or lack a quotation of the Scriptures. He was much gifted in disputation, and it was his delight.

Early in life he made a profession of religion, joined the old Baptists, in which he lived for many years, but some way he became dissatisfied with his church. He quit going to meeting and was excluded for non attendance. He lived out of the church until the day of his death, though he maintained good order and died in the triumph of faith, living only some twenty minutes from the time he was taken. Seeing his family was very much frightened, he told them not to be scared, for he had lived to die, and exclaimed with his last breath, "O death where is thy sting, O grave where is thy victory."

William never married until he was about thirty years old. He then married Lucretia Gardner, a widow whose maiden name was Robinson and old lady Robinson was a Glover and a sister to Uncle Charles Bussey's wife. She had two children (by her first husband) both daughters, the oldest was Frances. She married William Stocks, and lived to have one child and died in child bed. Stocks then married the other sister, Patsy, and is now alive and living in Talladega, Alabama.

William had one son and four daughters. The son married a Miss Leverett and lives in Atlanta. Three daughters, one married Hezekiah Dodwell, one married Henry Scarsbrook, one married my son, Freeman H. Pace, the other died when small. Brother William then lost his first wife and married Agatha Parker, by whom he had two sons and two daughters. The oldest was a son, Thomas, who died just before he was grown. Lucretia married a Mr. Hurst (Lucretia Jane Pace married John Newton Hurst in Jasper
County, Georgia). The other son, William, married a Miss Adams. Emily is yet single. Brother died in his 55th year and left a small handful of property. He died in Jasper County and was buried in Morgan County beside his first wife. His widow married James Montgomery in Jasper County Georgia where they now live. Here permit me to say that no man was ever more blessed in a wife or wives, than he was. His last wife was good, but his first wife had no equals, a Christian Mother in Israel. (31)

The fourth was a daughter, REbecca, and died when a child.

The fifth, sister Rhoda. Her first husband was Enos Morgan, had one child, Fannie, and Morgan died. She then after living a widow for several years, married Wilea Price bywhom she had one son and two daughters. The oldest, William, married Brother Richard's daughter, lived three or four years and died. Permelia married a Mr. Dunham, and now lives in Putnam County and is doing well. Rhoda married a Curstafney, which is all I know of her. I have heard they did no good. Curstafney was a gentlemanly man, well raised, too proud to beg and would not work, broke for thousands.(32)

My oldest sister, is dead and gone, I believe home to heaven. She was not only a christian in tongue, but in heart and in soul. She had some peculiarities of which I must speak. When her faith was wanting she would surely sink the lowest bordering on despair, mourning and weeping for days all at once, no matter where she was or what she was doing, riding, working or at church, she would break out in praises to God.

Her whole soul would seemingly take fire, her tongue would seemingly utter tidings almost incredible for a woman, often exhort and pray for sinners with a spirituality I never witnessed in any other. Many years have elapsed, my son, since your Aunt died. I, sometimes yet, can almost see her, and hear that angelic tongue in my ear. This much I will say, no brother ever loved a sister as well as I loved her. I feel determined, God being my helper, to see her in glory. She was a Baptist, of the high Calvinistic order, died some fifteen years ago in the triumphs of faith. O Lord, save brother and son.

Poor Price was a hard working, industrious man, very ignorant, though no better a man, kind and affectionate, honest and upright inall his dealings. Yet ardent spirits that bane of all social happiness, was used by him at
times to an excess to the great distress of his family. He would have sunk all his property, but sister got him, when he first began, to make over all his property, that is, the negroes, to his children, which saved a likely set of negroes to his children, though it did good in one way, it did evil in another, I have feared. It placed wife and children independent of the old man, and I have thought bore a little hard on him, and I can not help fearing it made him do worse than he would have done. He has been dead some two years. Was once a Baptist, but turned out for drinking -- of his death I know nothing.

The sixth was Sister Fanny, a small delicate woman, dark skin and very black hair, coarse features, but a very beautiful figure. She was much afflicted, say from 13 until she was near 30 years old, often having fits, suffering a great many deaths, the family often expecting for days at a time for her to die. (33)

When about thirty she became more healthy and married Mr. George Getzen, a poor man, but as good a man as any man. They lived happily together for some twenty years, had one son, Samuel, and two daughters, Polly and Fanny, who both married Drury Morgan, a son of Sister Nancy's. Samuel is a Baptist preacher, is doing well, stands high as a preacher not for his talents, but for his christian deportment and deepfelt piety and holy deportment. He now, July 5, 1849, belongs to the Missionary Baptist and is of the Arminian cast, lived in Edgefield District, South Carolina, 13 or 14 miles from Augusta. (34) (35)

My dear Sister Fanny has been dead many years, and I shall not say too much when I say she lived a christian, died a christian, and is gone home to glory where I hope to see her in the morning of the resurrection, not with that poor, weak, sickly body but with a glorious body like the Son of God.

I must say a few things of Brother Getzen, for he has been a man worthy of imitation in every way. When he married my sister he owned and lived upon 50 acres of poor, gray, black jack land, some stock and a horse, and he acquired by sister a negro girl nearly grown, and land which he sold for $300 and before he owned any more land he had bought some eight or ten negroes that he made off of that land. He then commenced buying land and negroes. He now owns some forty slaves and 1,500 acres of land, and has never moved more than one mile from where he first settled. Having bought a tract with a good dwelling on the main market road from the up country to Augusta,
thirteen miles from Augusta, he moved to it where he now lives. He early learned:

That in this the art of living lies,
To want no more than may suffice
And make that little do.

He never seemed in a hurry about his business, but worked by the rule, smooth, easy and constant, and had a place for everything and everything in its place, a very easy talking man, never speaking loud to his wife or negroes, yet was determined in all his ways, though kind and tender. After sister's death he married a Miss Qualls.

Seventh was a son, Drury. He lived single until he was about thirty years old. When he was a good, stout lad he was bitten by a rattlesnake, which came very near taking his life. His jaws became set and he was speechless. Having to send five or six miles after a doctor for snake bite who camd and brought some white worm looking roots which he beat up with water and gave him to drink, but he puked it up. By that time he had some boiled in sweet milk and poured down him—no quicker done than brother began to mend, and in some two hours he was able to sit up talking and laughing. And every year when the time of year came that he was bitten he seemed a bit deranged in his mind. One night in his sleep he got up and walked out of a window upstairs, falling some 15 to 20 feet in the hard yard, unjoining or slipping a joint in the small of his back, which caused him to suffer many deaths. And ever after he was weak in the back.

He was a large boney man, and would have been much of a man had it not been for his hurt in his back. At about 30 he married Phereby Jones, and by her he had three sons, Charles, Augustus and Drury. Augustus was never married and died in his prime of manhood, Drury and Charles are married and are living in DeKalb County, Georgia. Your uncle, after living with his wife ten years was attacked with cold plague, and lived about forty hours from the time he was taken, dying at my house in March, on Monday after the third Sunday, 1817.

Eighth was sister Mary, who married a Mr. John Darlin, a poor, lazy, sorry, harmless man who never did any good, spent all he had, not by dissipation but by laziness ate it up. They had five children, two sons and three daughters. Sister died in Autauga County, Alabama, say twenty years ago. Of the children I know very little, but was

-184-
informed they did and were doing surprisingly well for children left as they were.

Here my son, permit your father to express an opinion as it comes in time. Your father does firmly believe that many diseases of the body have their foundation in some unusual pressure of the mind, and more, many men are known as droll men, men we never can find out, the reason my son why we use such expressions in reference to different men, there is something found in them that differs from what is human nature always found in other men. This difference can only arise for one grand cause in all men, for to say it is ignorance, want of mind, will not do, for you often among those we call droll men find they are among the most talented men we have among us. The droll man I speak of is another class altogether, but some men are droll whose delight it is to be so, and if closely examined, it is pride in some and want of sense in others. And I would say in both, for the foundation of pride in all human beings is the want of sense. This always can be discovered easily, and forms no mystery.

But the droll man I wish to speak of is the mysterious man whose face you have known for years, and yet they are strangers to you that you never can know. This, my son, often arises from misguided parents, and other causes, causing a youth to follow an occupation not congenial to his nature, often destroying his native genius, becoming unhappy in his mind, throwing his mind out of its ordinary channel, forming the mysterious character that knows not himself, nor is he known by others. Many other causes often produce the same effects, such as disappointed love, or some bad crime committed in youth, or anything that takes hold of the soul so deeply, as not to be effected by time, naturally change the man, and as it is not a work of nature. It is unlike nature, is unnatural. Thus we call the man a strange man, and truly too, for the man is not natural man, and here could we know the cause that corrodes the very soul of such a man the mystery would vanish away. But this it is impossible to know, for nine times out of ten the man himself does not know, neither can he tell what is the matter. I have thought many times could such thing be known, and duly appreciated, such of our blame and side remarks, and merry laugh at the expense of such individuals would be turned into pity, and would have a tendency to ameliorate their condition, and take much of that strange­ness of character from such men.

Now for another digression. You were disposed to call in question your father's saying, "I know a thing" is so and
so. Now let me explain. I know such thing for myself, and concerning myself, for when I say I have a pain in my head or breast, no other created being can possibly know it, yet I know it for myself. And so of every other thing that I say I know, my mind is convinced of the fact, having weighed the subject thoroughly in my mind. My mind is being convinced of the truth of my assertion. I say I know it just as though I had taken your scales and weights and weighed to a customer eight pounds of coffee. He might say the quantity is deficient, I throw my eyes over the scales and weights, I see all right, I then say I know I am right. Still I may be in error, for so far as myself and my mind is concerned, I say I know I am right, there are eight pounds. And he may undertake to show me that I had the wrong weights or the scales were hitched some way, should be succeed in convincing my mind I then say I know I am wrong. Otherwise I shall still say there are eight pounds.

Do not understand me to mean or to be misunderstood, that I know with that perfection of knowledge that God knows. No, not so, but so far as me and my knowledge is concerned, I know as man and not as God, who cannot err, but as poor, fallible man, that knows scarcely anything. Though Martin Van Buren was much stigmatized for an opinion touching the right of congress to free the slaves in the District of Columbia, he says that from the light before him, they have the right to do so. Now I think I understood his language, he did not know, but was inclined to think that congress had the right under the constitution to free the slaves in the District of Columbia, but did not know, for his mind was not made up.

Thus of free will and free agency in man to me is perfect nonsense. I know it is not so, it may be so with others, but not so with me. Long experience has taught me that I am the creature of circumstances, my mind acting only as acted upon, or influenced by circumstances that surround me. Why do I will to eat and drik? Because I am inclined to do so, by the imperative calls of hunger and thirst, and my judgment convinced that animal life requires it.

Why do I pray? From the fact that I know I am a sinner against God, and must stand at the bar and account for the deeds done in the body, not by the body but in the body. I can command my hand, my tongue, my foot, but a carnal mind that is enmity against God who can command. Nothing but the grace or spirit of God operating upon my spirit or soul influencing the soul to act right, not then that any acts from the volition of the will, but from the fact, that the
grace of God and operation of the Holy Ghost acting upon the mind becomes influenced and right then and not until then will he do anything right in the sight of God.

Again, I will to live where I am living, on my little farm with a few cows and hogs, but why? Because circumstances around me are such that my mind is thoroughly convinced, that is the best I can do under the circumstances. I have no will strictly speaking, all nonsense. But I have rationality, the gift of my Father, praised be his Holy Name, that is enabled to act as acted upon, and this causes me to differ from the brute, were it not for this I should be brute in every sense of the word. And this again is another reason why I pray, God is a spirit, and the only agent that can act on my spirit, and unless acted upon, being of the earth and earthly, created on the earth, of the earth and the earth for me, but to go to heaven is another thing altogether.

I am mortal and heaven is immortal. I am every way unfit for heaven and heaven unfit for me, but as God has been pleased in his great goodness to lay help upon his only son, who is called the second Adam, the Lord from Heaven, and quickening spirit possessing life in himself and the right to give life to whom he will, a body his father prepared for him through that ingenious manufactory, the woman, he comes in the fullness of the time, God's time (to work out a possible salvation for all men).

No, my son, this is not God's word, hear, hear, O, my son, he comes to seek and to save that which was lost, and he is God, and beside him there is not God. Hear my son, the following dialogue, founded on the 33rd chapter of the 24th verse of Job --"Deliver him from going down into the pit, I have found a ransom."

God the Father--The soul that sins shall die, for sin is a transgression of my law. And when I looked down from heaven to see if any did good, and I found none, no not one.

Jesus Christ--But Father, I was made of a woman, made under your righteous law, redeem them that were under the law. I bore their sins in my own body upon the tree of the cross, dying for the just and the unjust.

God the Father--But who are you and what offering do you make that will appease my wrath?

Jesus Christ--I am your only son, one equal to you in respect. I am come down from heaven not to do my own will,
but the will of you, my Father, which is in heaven, and you and I are one—I am God manifest in the flesh. The offering I propose is the body you prepared for me in the womb of the Virgin Mary, and if the offering is not sufficient, may it not be your fault and not mine. I took the body you prepared, went into the world, suffered, bled and died upon the tree of the cross. My soul was exceedingly sorrowful even unto death, and it caused me to sweat as it were great drops of blood. I trod the wine press of your wrath alone, and of the people there was none to help. And you promised me the heathen for my possession. And that I should see of the travail of my soul and be satisfied, and I have your word, saying this is my well beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

God the Father—But what availeth all this? The creature, man, is of the earth, earthy and flesh and blood cannot enter into the kingdom, no man cannot, shall not enter heaven in my presence in this situation.

Jesus Christ—But have you not given me all power in heaven and in earth and I can purify him by the washing of regeneration and cause him to be zealous of good works, I can quicken him and make him alive in me, and wash him in my own blood that cleaseth from all sin.

God the Father—But man has a carnal mind, not subject to my law, neither indeed can be.

Jesus Christ—But the preparation of the heart and the answer of his tongue is of the Lord, and I am the Lord of heaven and earth, and I can give him another heart, and write your laws in that heart, and you know that from the abundance of the heart the mouth will speak. If you love me you will love them, for I shall be in them and they shall be in me, and I in you and you in me. Hear, fear not little flock, it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom.

My dear son, predestination and choice, or election is the doctrine of the Bible. God the Father has chosen his son, the only Savior of man. Predestination surely is the foundation of his choosing his son, for surely so great a work never was begun without determination what he was going to do and by what means. He did determine and did make man, man did and has sinned. He did prepare a body for his son, who did come into the world to do the will of his Father, and this Son had life in himself, and the right to give this life to whom he would, also power on earth to forgive sin, by himself being made sin for us, that knew
of no sin, that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.

God the Father—This will do, you are my beloved and only Son. I am well pleased with you and with what you have done.

Ninth, was your Uncle Richard, whom you have seen. He was born August 9, 1785, and was married in December 1806 to Amie Bussey, daughter of Hezekiah Bussey, my Mother’s brother. They had two sons and seven daughters. One of the daughters, Louisa, died when eight or ten years old. Also one son, William, died in his fifth year. The rest are all alive, -- five married. (36)

Mary, the oldest, married a Mr. Paschal, is raising a family, and has made considerable property. Lucretia and Lucinda married Weavers, brothers, and are raising families and are doing well. Virgil, his son, married Miss Ann Morrison, quite a lady, well raised, likely and intelligent. They have now, 1850, two children, two daughters, Nancy and Amy, single and living with their father, your aunt, having been dead some four years.

Your Uncle Richard early in life made a profession of religion, joined the Baptist and commenced preaching, is of the high Calvinistic order, has attained to some distinction as a preacher, classed among the most powerful reasoners of his day. Much delights to hold forth the doctrine of predestination, and election, or choice, and the purpose of God in Christ to save sinners, proving the same by reason and Scripture to have existed before time began. This he called (and justly, too) free grace.

Having, my son, finished the memoirs of my family to the best of my knowledge and recollection, I shall now write you some other things for you to read when your father is dead and gone. I shall commence by saying:

Remember the Sabbath day to keep it holy (or in order that ye may keep it holy) is my understanding.

1st — Why should the last day of the week be remembered under the law and the first day under the gospel.

2nd — Why should the Sabbath be remembered more than any other day, or kept holy more than Monday or Tuesday.

3rd — What gave rise to the days of the week, Monday, Tuesday, Wednesday, etc. We regret that we are almost

-189-
compelled to follow the heathen custom in the names of the
days of the week, all were named in honor of some idol God,
worshipped by them on that day. Thus Monday, the moon;
Sunday, the sun; Thor for Thursday; Friga for Friday,
etc., mostly gods of the Saxons, whose descendents we are
hence we have fallen into the custom. (Bailey’s Dictionary
that accompanies this paper).

4th -- Say something about keeping the first day or
Sabbath day holy and how this is to be done.

5th -- Close with some remarks on the danger of not
remembering the Sabbath day, both under the law and under
the gospel.

A. The seventh, or last day of the week should be
remembered under the law on account of God's creating the
heavens and the earth, and all things t herein in six days,
and resting the seventh from all his work and commanding
this day to be remembered on account of the power and
wisdom manifested in creating all things out of nothing,
and giving to all created things a law, or in other words,
placing all things that He has created under a law so
that even the raging ocean cannot pass her bounds, so that
a beautiful order is kept up from that day to this--no
confusion, all harmony and good order, no atom flying
through the air, but what is under a strict law, all things
rolling on in time and place producing day and night, the
summer and winter, heat and cold, rain and fruitful seasons
and seed time and harvest so beneficial to his creature,
man.

And this God has done for the good of his creature,
man, therefore, man should remember God, his creator, in
the days of his youth, and whenever the seventh day breaks
upon his vision he should lay aside all his employments of
whatever kind they may be, and look into the book of nature
that is always open before him, the book of God’s Holy
Word, as a revelation from heaven to assist his senses in
the study of the nature of the great I AM.

His wisdom and power, yes, and the great goodness and
mercy exercised toward the poor, sinful man, O, my. O,
could we profitably remember those things, would it not
have a tendency to give us humility of soul in viewing the
great I AM in his works made plain by His word. For which
let us be sober, and watch unto prayer.

Passing on to the birth of our Lord, Jesus Christ,
viewing his errand into the world to save poor, lost.
miserable, undone sinners, view him in his life, going about doing good. O, follow Him into the Garden of Gethsemane, there hear his cries, "My soul is exceedingly sorrowful, even unto death. O, Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me. Nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou wilt."

Behold the baseness of Judah, comes heading or leading a band of soldiers crying "Hail Master," and kissing Him, intending at the same time for this as a sign to the soldiers that they might know whom to arrest. This was Thursday night. The soldiers hurry him away in the night to Caiaphas, the high priest. Here Jesus suffered much abuse during the night. When Friday morning was come the chief priest and elders of the people took counsel to put Him (Jesus) to death, and they not having the right to put any man to death, they led Him away to Pilate, the Roman Governor. Here Jesus undergoes a kind of mock trial, is condemned to be crucified, they put on him a purple robe and plaited a crown of thorns, and put it on his head.

O, that every human being may remember all the scenes that turned up on the trial and crucifixion of our blessed Redeemer preparatory to the Christian Sabbath.

Jesus, according to our reckoning of time, was in his last agonies about twelve o'clock, on Friday, and from twelve until three o'clock darkness prevailed over all the land. Joseph, a counsellor and just man, begs the body of Jesus, wraps it up in fine linen cloth, and lays it in his own new sepulcher, hewn in a rock. Here the blessed Redeemer lies all day Saturday (the Jew's Sabbath under the law) and until midnight Saturday night, yet saw no corruption, according to the prediction of the prophet, and according to the prediction of the prophet, the third day he arises a mighty conqueror of death, hell and the grave.

Having died for our offences, he now arises for our justification. Now opens up our vision the first day of the week, the Christian Sabbath, under the gospel. The law dispensation and covenant of works now closes and the kingdom now forms under the reign of grace. Now instead of sacrifices and offerings under the law, it is repentance toward God, and faith in our Lord Jesus Christ.

B. We do not understand the Sabbath as a day to be any better than any other day. Therefore, notice that it is not said "Remember the Sabbath day too, and not keep it holy, but TO keep it holy." And let it never be forgotten that wherever the Sabbath day is forgotten, that individual
is in every way unprepared to keep Monday, Tuesday, or any other day holy. So, on the other hand, that individual that by faith is enabled to view the great I AM, as the maker of all things, and to whom all things owe their existence, and to whom all things are accountable according to a law given, and that himself being a violator of God's holy law, under the law and under the curse, this working in him that repentance not to be repented of, and by the law becomes dead to sin. And to whom Jesus Christ is revealed as the Saviour of sinners, and that God can remain just and save a poor, lost, undone sinner through Jesus Christ's death and suffering, and that soul only can keep any day holy, and will keep every day holy. For he being born of God cannot sin, his seed remaining in him, Jesus Christ becoming the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth. And here now is another individual that is not under law but is under Grace, not governed by a law over him, but a law written in his heart. The Son having made him free, he is free indeed. May God make us all free by the renewing of the Holy Ghost, is our prayer.
NOTES BY MAUD McLURE KELLY

As a direct descendant of Barnabas Pace, with over forty years of experience in genealogical research during her lifetime and thirty years of research on the PACE family, Miss Maud McLure Kelly wrote an analysis of the Barnabas Pace letter which I now pass on to you:

1. If Barnabas Pace was born in 1787, as stated in the heading, he was more than in his eleventh year when his father died. Could the error be in copying? (Yes, 1789 is correct).

2. The line of descent as given by him is impossible on its face. He says that his own great* grandfather came from England to Virginia and was one of the first settlers in Virginia. He says his own grandfather, Richard Pace, was born in 1700. Since Virginia was settled in 1607, that would make his great* grandfather over a hundred years old when his first son** was born. He then gives a line from which it appears that his own great-grandfather was the grandfather of his own grandfather, which is inconsistent. (*This was based on a copy which had omitted one "great" but the line he gave is still impossible on its face. **Grandson).

He (Barnabas Pace) states that he never saw his grandparents, and that all of his uncles except the youngest, Barnabas, were dead when his father died, and that he himself was but in his eleventh year when his father died, and that he never saw the Uncle Barnabas before 1798. So, no close association is shown with anyone who personally knew his grandfather's parents. So his account of the ancestry of his grandfather is purely his recollection, in his old age, of what he had heard as a very small child. As shown above, his account of his lineage is inconsistent on its face. The existing records show, furthermore, that the line as given back of his grandfather is incorrect.

Traditions have proven so generally unreliable, that genealogists consider them useful only as clues. The germ of provable fact in the matter seems to be that Uncle Barney had heard that one of his brothers bore
a name which had been handed down from the original Pace, and that this Pace was one of the very early settlers of Virginia. He got mixed up, however, on which of his brother's bore the traditional name. If his brother Richard's name is substituted for his brother William's we can prove the line by legal evidence. Compare this historically accurate account:

The only Pace found among the early settlers of Virginia is RICHARD PACE, of Pace's Pains, who is supposed to have come to Virginia by 1618, and saved the Colony at the time of the Great Massacre of 1622. He died before 1625, when his widow, ISABELLA, had married Capt. William Perry, of the Council. This Richard Pace is the only original immigrant named Pace listed in the Virginia land grant records, and all Paces in the country are believed to descend from him.

"Pace's Paines" was re-patented in 1628 to George Pace as "son and heir". He married Sarah Macock, daughter and heiress of Capt. Samuel Macock, of the Council, who had been killed in the Great Massacre. They lived at "Maycox" on the James, which had been granted to her father in 1618. The only child definitely proven to have been theirs was Richard, who sold Maycox in 1659, and recited in the deed that he was eldest son and heir of George Pace and his wife, Sarah, daughter and heiress of Capt. Samuel Macock, etc., his wife, Mary, joining in the deed.

This son, Richard Pace, moved to the extreme southern part of Virginia, near the North Carolina line, but on account of destruction of county records, but little is known of him or his family. His widow was appointed administrator of his estate in 1677 and by 1692 she had married Nicholas Whitmore, per VA. Hist. Gen. p. 167.

Soon after 1700, the Paces moved across the State line into North Carolina and settled on the Roanoke River, and they are supposed to have been brothers. But they were not named William and Thomas. They were named Richard and John. Later a James Pace came, but he settled elsewhere than along the Roanoke River.
In Raleigh, N. C. in 1941, I saw an original land grant to Richard Pace, dated 1706. The wills of both are still in existence. John, who died in 1727, mentioned in his will his wife (name not given), sons John, William and George, and daughters Elizabeth, Frances, Ann, and Mary. Richard Pace’s will is dated March 13, 1736, and was probated at the February term, 1738. In it he named wife, Rebecca, sons William, Thomas, Richard and daughters, Ann Stewart, Rebecca Bradford (she later married Aycock), Amy Green, Tabitha Moore, Mary Johnson and Sarah House. Until his death, the records also contained mention of Richard Pace Jr., but thereafter only "Richard Pace" and it is noted that John Pace mentioned in his will no son Richard—did his son of that name die? Or did he omit the traditional Pace given name?

Or did Uncle Barney get the William from the Cain family? On March 3, 1732, William Cain, of Bertie Precinct, N. C. made his will naming in it his sons, William, James, Hardy and daughters Patience, Eunice, Sarah and Rachel, and this will was witnessed by one "Richard Pace Jr." and William Cain. The will to indicate that these children were all under age, and the widow was named as the Executrix. Could this have been the brother-in-law of Richard Pace Jr., and son of a James Cain? From the prevalence of the give name Hardy in the other branches of the Pace family—that is, among the descend­ants of Richard Pace Jr.’s brothers—there may have been a relationship to the Cain family through the Hardy family.

At any rate, Richard Pace Jr., was not son and grandson of a William Pace, but of a Richard Pace, as shown by these records.

3. The fact that Richard and Elizabeth Cain Pace named their eldest son James, suggests that she was the daughter of James Cain. Note that William Cain (Supra) had a son named James Cain.

4. The confiscation of the propety of James Pace as a Tory confirmed by the Act of May 4, 1782, in which he is called "James Pace, Senior", of Effingham County. See
Chandler's Revolutionary Records of Georgia, Vol. 1, pages 96, 373 and 518. He was a tavern keeper of St. Matthew's Parish, it seems.

5. Samuel Pace received a land grant in 1774 in Burke County. See Land Grants, Vol. M, p. 84 and 590, YYY p. 470 and 471.

6. The Census of 1790 lists only Drury and Mary Pace in Edgefield County, S. C. Could Mary have been widow of this Silas? On March 26 1802, she was appointed administratrix of the estate of Silas Pace, probably as successor of someone else. In 1807, John Lyons was appointed as administrator of her estate, or rather the estate of a Mary Pace.

7. Was this the William Pace who died in 1790 in the part of Richmond County, GA which was cut off as Columbia? From the deed records there, William and Mary Pace had children named William, Silas, David, Mary Ann Pace and Sarah Ray. This Mary Pace died before April 17, 1804 when her son William was appointed administrator of her estate.

8. Confirmed by Colonial Records of Georgia 9, p. 289, where Charles Pace petitioned for land, as having lived in Georgia for 16 months, with a wife, one child and a negro, petition granted Feb. 1765, also by deed from Dreadzell Pace to Dreadzell Pace Jr., son of Charles Pace dated Sept. 7, 1770, and by petition of Dreadzell Pace, minor child of Charles Pace deceased for leave to nominate Barnabas Pace as his guardian dated July 21, 1778, see Early Records of Georgia, Vol. 1, p. 30 and 34. The later records of that section of Georgia have many items about this family.

9. Early Records of GA I, p. 18 shows that on Nov. 1773, Dread Pace of S. C. proved his headright, and that he had no family. On page 33 is the record of Silas Pace's appointment as administrator of the estate of Dreadzil Pace, Indian trader, on September 15, 1777.

10. This account by Uncle Barney explains the deed which Thomas Pace made to Mrs. Leroy Hammond, and the deed she made back to Drury Pace for division among the legal heirs of Thomas Pace, all of which are on record at Augusta. Thomas Pace, at about the same time, made a similar deed to Thomas Garnett.

11. Barnabas's three daughters by his first wife were
Elizabeth, who married John Casey, brother to her step-mother, Nancy, who married —-1818, Burket Wilburn, and probably Annie, who married —-1809 Robert Price. Uncle Barney says he had two sons and three daughters by his second wife, and then names three sons and two daughters. The daughter, Patsy married Nathaniel Hunt White in 1829, in Elbert County, GA, and died 29 Oct. 1886. I have a copy of her Bible record. From it, it appears that Barnabas Pace died Aug. 3, 1831, and his wife Mary (Casey) Pace died 16 Oct. 1839, and their daughter Martha (Patsy) was born on Nov. 15, 1801. These are the ancestors of Hon. Hugh H. White, president of the Public Service Commission of the State of Alabama, and of his brother William Thomas White (1864-1925) who married Cousin Annie Woodruff, great-granddaughter of Rev. Richard and Amy (Bussey) Pace.


13. McCall's Roster of Revolutionary Soldiers in Georgia lists Arthur Fort and says he was born Jan. 15, 1750, and died in Twiggs County, GA, June 15, 1833, married Susanna Tomlinson, widow of Richard Whitehead (by whom she had a son Richard Jr., born 1776), and that their children were Sarah (b. 1779), Moses, Arthur, Tomlinson, Susanna, Elizabeth, Zachariah C., and Owen Charlton (1778-1829). In Early Records of Georgia I, p. 39, there is mention of a deed to Arthur Fort of 96 District, S. C., from Winneford Fort, Senior, of the same place, no consideration given, a deed of gift of a negro, dated Oct. 1, 1779, proved in Wilkes County, GA, April 4, 1783, before Arthur Fort, Justice of the Peace. Winnefred is a frequent name among the descendants of Richard Pace who died in North Carolina, and was, no doubt, the name of Arthur Fort's mother.


15. On March 1, 1719, Richard Pace Jr., was granted 1,140 acres of land on the north side of the Morattock (Roanoke) River, in Chowan County, N. C. (Land Grants, Vol. 8, pages 174 and 195). This is the part of the County which was later cut off into Northampton
County. In 1743 and 1744, he received additional land grants in Northampton County. His brother, Thomas Pace, died in this county in 1765, through whom Nathaniel Pace of Washington County, GA seems to descend. His brother, William Pace, also died in this county in 1775, and his son, Stephen died in Putnam County, GA in 1822. This is the line of Congressman Pace of GA. I have copies of abstracts of many of these wills and deeds and other court records.

15A. From deeds and other records in Edgefield County Courthouse, it appears that Richard Pace Jr., and Solomon Newsome Jr., were involved in financial transactions in 1775, and that in 1797, James and Elizabeth Anderson, Ludbrook Lee and James Rhodes sold to George DeLaughter their interest in land as heirs of Richard Pace, and that Charlotte Pace witnessed the transaction in 1775. Could Ludbrook Lee's wife, Charlotte, have been this Charlotte Pace? (Yes. Richard V married (1)___ and had daughter Elizabeth; then married (2) Sarah Day and had Charity, Charlotte and Mary.

15B. Noel Pace was probably the same as Knowles Pace, mentioned in Colonial Records of Georgia 10, p. 661 and 845, who petitioned for land on Germany's Creek, the petition being granted Dec. 1768. His will, as Knowles Pace, was signed July 19, 1776, probated in Wilkes County, GA, March 4, 1783; and in it besides freeing a slave, he left everything to Leroy Pace, son of Barnabas Pace, then a minor, and named Barnabas Pace and Henry Ware Sr., as his executors. (Early Records of GA I, p. 44). On March 11, Silas Pace of 97 District, S.C., sold to Ambross Holiday of Richmond Co., GA. 100 acres on Germany's Creek, reciting that it was granted to Knowles Pace in 1769 and conveyed by him to said Silas Pace in 1771. The deed was witnessed by Drury Pace. (GA. D.A.R. Historical Collection II, p. 292). Note that this Silas Pace was alive in 1796.


17. In Vol. 8 of the same, p. 776, land grant to Richard Pace of 22 acres was signed in December 1762. This land was later willed by Capt. Drury Pace to his son.
Drury, who sold it in 1808 to West Cook and recited in the deed that it had been granted to Richard Pace on Dec. 16, 1762. Lincoln County, GA Deeds H. p. 128. The land grant is recorded in Vol. D. of land grants, p. 241, Secretary of State's Office, Atlanta, GA.

18. The dates given in D.A.R. application #127-337 were obviously incorrect. No authority was ever found for those dates, and Georgia (Fortson) Jenkins whose application it was is now dead.


20. See South Carolina Baptist 1670-1805 by Townsend.

21. His will on record in Augusta, GA, was dated January 26, 1801, and witnessed by John Catlett and Ann Bussey. It was probated May 4, 1801. Uncle Barney says the will was made when the preacher came, but he says down further on that the next day was Friday. According to two perpetual calendars, the will which was probated was signed on Monday, January 26, 1801. I cannot understand this seeming discrepancy, the only part of Uncle Barney's account of what he himself actually knew which does not agree with the legal records. Could there be a mistake in the copying? He says he himself was in his eleventh year and his father in his 55th year when he died—the will was dated and probated in 1801, so if Uncle Barney was born in 1787 he was in his 14th year and his father was in his 56th year. (Two errors Uncle Barney's birth was copied as 1787 and should have been 1789 -- and Drury Pace died in 1801, not 1800. This was Uncle Barney's error).

22. Since the will was dated January 26, 1801 (Ga.D.A.R. Hist. Col. II, p. 55, which I myself verified by copying the whole will from the original will), Uncle Barney has certainly made an error (if this is correctly copied) in the year. But there is a discrepancy between the date given and the day of the week as given. February 5, 1800, was on Wednesday, and Feb. 5, 1801, was Thursday. Yet, I believe that Uncle Barney was probably correct as to the day of the week when his father died, etc., and I can but wonder if the will which he says was made on Thursday before he died was never probated, but an earlier one probated instead. (Copied as Feb. 5 -- should be Feb. 1).
23. Hezekia Bussey, another son mentioned further, evidently came later not known personally to Uncle Barney. Was Nathan who married Susanna Downing yet another son? (No, son of Hezekiah).

24. Charles Bussey married Mrs. Bugg, a few months before he died, as the license was dated Feb. 3, 1830, in Wilkes County, GA. Administration on his estate was granted to the widow, Mary M. Bussey, on August 25, 1830. She was nee Wright and had married William A. Bugg in Richmond County, GA, marriage bond dated on May 3, 1810. She died in 1836, having married again Aaron Marvin, bond dated Oct. 21, 1833. She made a will, in which she stated that she was then of Mobile, Alabama, but formerly of Augusta, GA., the will being of record in the courthouse at Augusta, GA.

25. Jeremiah Bussey, married Oct. 13, 1811 -- died Oct. 18, 1822, and his wife, Harriet (Hightower) Bussey died Oct. 10, 1820. Their children were: Eliza Ann, born Oct. 6, 1812, died in infancy; Frances Emmeline born Jan. 5, 1814, died Jan. 6, 1884, married Daniel Mitchell Glover; Elizabeth born Nov. 2, 1815, married N. T. Magruder; Charles Lewis born 1818, married E. M. Holland and her twin brother, Joseph Hightower, born also Dec. 17, 1818, died June 1820. This data from the Bible record of Descendants. According to the records of Edgefield County, Christian Broithaupt was the guardian of Frances E., Elizabeth, Charles and Harriet.

26. Martin Hitt was the son of John Hitt and Sarah Day, according to the records of Edgefield County, GA which disproves the tradition that his mother was Sarah Pace. There seems to have been some connection between the Day family and the Pace family, however, and the wives of James Rhodes and of Ludbrock Lee seem to have been daughters of Sarah Pace. (Sarah Day was second wife of Richard Pace IV. See note 15-A).

27. Nancy Bussey's husband was Jacob Dill, according to family records.

28. The date of her birth is unknown, but her husband, Abiah Morgan, was born October 27, 1767, according to descendants.

29. Their children, according to descendants were: Drury born April 25, 1792, died March 25, 1854, married (1)
Polly Robertson and married (2) his cousin, Polly Getzen; Nancy born May 5, 1802 died Dec. 7, 1890, married John Mealing; Evan; Olive; Maria; Lucretia; Loretta; Tabitha and Polly, a total of two sons and seven daughters. The discrepancy probably arose because of the fact that Loretta died unmarried.

30. Uncle Barney evidently did not like his brother-in-law. According to Uncle Ben Kelly, who married Uncle Barney's niece, Virginia Pace, Abiah Morgan "was a nice, foxy old man."

31. Rev. Dredzel Evans Pace died early in Nov. 1852, in Talladega County, Alabama, leaving a widow, Mititia Leverett (born May 12, 1808, died Dec. 30, 1883, according to her tombstone in the Baptist Church Cemetery at Ashland, Ala., which I copied), and ten children: William S. Pace, who died as a prisoner of war in 1864 from whom the Paces of Eastaboga, Ala. descend, Lucretia Holland who married Wm. D. Haynes, and was the mother of Hon. John J. Haynes, a former law partner of my father's and now for many years Assistant Attorney General of Alabama; Thomas G., Abraham L., Falkner H., Catherine, Mary E., Maria A., Emanda and Dredzel Erwin Pace. I have additional date about them if desired. According to the first book of Marriage Records in the Talladega County Courthouse, he was ordained 29 Oct. 1842, by a presbytery composed of Rev. Samuel Henderson; Rev. Jefferson Falkner, and Rev. Richard Pace, (his uncle) and Rev. John Wood.

32. William H. Price and Lucretia Bussey Pace (Jan. 1, 1811 - Feb. 11, 1855) were married May 28, 1829, in Putnam County, GA. Their known children were: Calvin R. and Louisa who married her step-brother, John J. Weaver, and brother and sister both moved to Texas. William H. Price had died and his widow had married Simeon H. Weaver before 1838.

33. Fanny Pace was born Jan. 2, 1774, died July 18, 1811, and married George Getzen about 1803, according to the records of her descendants. George Getzen was born March 27, 1777 and died April 29, 1855, the son of Samuel and Susan (Limbecker) Getzen, and he married (2) Nov. 21, 1811, Sally Quarles.

34. Samuel Pace Getzen was born Sept. 25, 1806 and died Feb. 11, 1891. He married Mary Ann Sullivan. His Journal is still in the possession of his descendants.
and is very interesting.

35. Polly was born Aug. 6, 1804, and was the 2nd wife of her cousin, Drury Morgan, whose first wife is said by descendants to have been Mary Robertson, not Fanny Getzen. Nancy Morgan, daughter of Drury Morgan and Polly Getzen, married her cousin, Joseph Bussey, and they were parents of John Morgan Bussey, now living (1942) at Parksville, S.C. The other daughter, Nancy Getzen, was born Nov. 10, 1808, married Osborn Jennings, and they moved to Texas, according to family recollection.

36. Rev. Richard Pace died Nov. 28, 1858 in Walker County, Texas, and is buried there at Ebenezer Church. Amy Bussy, his wife, was born Feb. 11, 1790, in Lincoln County, GA., and died July 18, 1846 in Calhoun (then called Benton) County, Ala., daughter of Hezekiah and Amy Bussey. Their children were:

Mary, b. July 17, 1808, died Nov. 16, 1881 in Morgan Co., GA, married May 27, 1824 to John Paschal.

Lucretia Bussey, b. Jan. 1, 1811, died Feb. 11, 1855, married (1) Wm. H. Price, (2) Simeon H. Weaver. She is buried in Calhoun Co., Ala., at the Simeon Weaver Place.

Louisa, born March 31, 1813, died Sept. 20, 1824, Putnam County, GA. Lucinda born Aug. 14, 1816, died Dec. 11, 1879 in Alabama, also buried at Simeon Weaver Place. She married Nov. 24, 1835, in Putnam County, GA. Lindsay Weaver, brother of Simeon, and son of David and Frances (Howard) Weaver.

Virgil Homer, born April 8, 1819, died April 21, 1879 in Walker Co., Tex., married Ann Catherine Morrison Sept. 29, 1846, in Benton Co., Ala., 11 children.

William Wallace, born April 29, 1821, died Sept. 8, 1825 in Putnam Co., GA. This is a favorite name among the Busseys.

Camp Kelly. Of their six sons (they had no daughters) only Richard Bussey Kelly (1859-1927) left descendants. He was well-known in Alabama as lawyer and judge, he married Oct. 10, 1880 in Talladega Co., Ala. Leona Bledsoe who survived him (died 2/7/1945). Their living children are: Capt. Richard Bussey Kelly Jr., Retired, who has served in the State Legislature, and has been Commander of the American Legion in Ala., Samuel Bledsoe (died 1943) formerly teacher of languages at the Citadel, now in a Veterans Hospital, served as Lt. overseas in the World War, William Milner, now in the Army, as Morale Officer, etc., at Camp Beauregard, La., served overseas in the 1st. World War as 2nd Lt., and was Assistant Chief Attorney of the Veterans Administration for Ala., married a descendant of Gen. E. W. Pettus, U.S. Senator of Ala., and has two children; Frances Marrien (died 1955), married Dr. R.E.D. Irvin, now deceased, and has 4 children: Mrs. Gary Guyton Bullock, of Georgia; Mrs. Ralph Bryan Miller, of Pensacola; Lt. Richard Kelly Irvin, now stationed at Fort Knox, and Robert S. Jr., a senior at the State University; and Maud McLure Kelly, of Birmingham, Ala., retired Lawyer, former State President U.S.D. 1812, and of the American Legion Auxiliary, etc., Nancy, born March 3, 1827, died Walker Co., Texas, Dec. 30, 1883, without issue. She married Samuel Purrhus Montgomery, Feb. 12, 1855. They were both extremely ugly, according to their photographs, but those who knew them invariably said they were so lovable that they seemed beautiful to those who knew them.

Virginia Hill, born March 1, 1830, died in Vernon, Texas August 3, 1892, married Benjamin Gerard Kelly, brother of Capt. Samuel Camp Kelly, supra. They had a numerous family.

I have copies of the family records of all these except Lucretia Bussey Pace. Her 2nd husband, Simeon Weaver, was a widower with children when she married him. He married a 3rd time after her death, and I have been unable to locate her family records. Her Price children
moved to Texas before the war Between the States. The entry about her 1st marriage and the entries of her birth and death were found in my grandmother's Bible. These records which I have collected will be gladly shared with any of the kin who are interested. I have collected them over a period of more than thirty years.

This concludes comments of Maud McLure Kelley

on the Barnabas Pace Letter
RICHARD PACE

By: Miss Maud McLure Kelly
Written For The
Alabama Baptist Historical Society
November 21, 1947

Elder Richard Pace was born in Edgefield District, South Carolina, on August 9, 1785, the fourth son of Drury Pace, who had served in the Revolution as Captain of the militia in that State, and who was later Justice of the Peace of Richmond County, Georgia, and extensive landowner on both sides of the Savannah River and a devout member of the Baptist Church. Drury Pace, was the sixth generation in direct descent, from the Richard Pace of Pace's Pains who had saved Jamestown in 1622 in the Great Massacre and from Captain Samuel Maycock who had been a member of the Council in the first General Assembly of Virginia in 1619. Elder Pace's mother was Mary Bussey, the youngest child and only daughter of Rev. Charles Bussey, a pioneer Baptist preacher of South Carolina, who also labored in the organization of early churches in Georgia, and who preached the funeral sermon of his close friend and colleague, Rev. Daniel Marshall. (Ref: "Campbell's Georgia Baptists" page 19).

On December 28, 1805, in Lincoln County, Georgia, Elder Pace married his first cousin, Amy Bussey, daughter of Hezekiah Bussey, who served in the Revolution in Georgia with Elijah Clarke, Rev. Robert Walton Sr., was the officiating minister at their marriage. She died July 18, 1846 in Benton, now Calhoun County, Alabama. Years later Elder Samuel Henderson wrote of her:

"She was truly a saintly woman, discreet and prudent in her household, 'a keeper at home,' meek and gentle inspirit, hospitable and kind to strangers and friends, an ornament to her church, and altogether a fitting companion for such a husband. And, although, this worthy man never believed while here, that saints would know each other in heaven, I must think that he and his dear wife have long since met in joyful recognition in their heavenly home."

-205-
In 1807, Richard Pace moved to the newly formed County of Putnam, being one of the first settlers there. (Ref: Smith's, "The story of Georgia and the Georgia People," page 263. He lived in this County until his removal to Alabama in 1837.

Shortly after his twenty-eighth birthday, and in Putnam County, Richard Pace experienced his spiritual rebirth and entered upon an active religious life which ultimately left its imprint in four states and upon lives of men and women then unborn. He became converted and joined Crooked Creek Baptist Church, in Putnam County, GA on August 13, 1813, and was baptized by its pastor, Rev. Elijah Mosley. The next year, on August 27, 1814, he was chosen Church Clerk and remained active in church affairs until dismissed by letter January 24, 1819, writing the annual letter to the Association, and representing the church on numerous occasions. He then united with Harmony Church, near Salem, in Morgan County, GA, and soon was chosen Church Clerk there. In 1822, he was "liberated from the office of Clerk to become minister," and was ordained by a presbytery composed of Elder Colley, Elder Benjamin Bussey (his brother-in-law) and Elder Robinson.

What his first pastorate was is uncertain. In 1824, he was unanimously chosen pastor of Harmony Church and also of Crooked Creek Church, and in January 1825, he again joined Crooked Creek Church and remained a member of that church until his removal to Alabama. This church had 76 members, according to its minutes. Ref: Copy of Church Minutes in Manuscript Collection of Alabama Dept. of Archives & History; Historical Collection, Dept. of Archives & History of the State of Georgia.

A period of great revival and growth in the church followed. The membership of the church grew until, in 1830, it had reached 109 members, its all-time maximum. About this time, the great migration began to the newly opened land in the west, both of Georgia and in Alabama, and by 1834, Crooked Creek Church's membership had declined to 64, and continued to drop for several years as members moved away.

In the 1830's, dissention began to rear its ugly head in the Baptist denomination in Georgia over the so called "benevolent institutions," the Missionary and Bible Societies, The Sunday Schools, Ministerial Education and
By 1830, the feeling was so intense that the Ocmulgee Association withdrew from the statewide General Association, and in 1837 withdrew fellowship. Richard Pace was one of the leaders in the effort to restore harmony and to heal the breach in the denominational ranks. A call appeared in The Christian Index of April 28, 1836, signed by ministers, one from each of the ten associations of the state and from another single church, appointing the second Sunday in July 1836, as the time and Forsyth as the place, for the purpose of praying and meeting together, "with reference to the divided state of our denomination," stating further that "we, whose names are hereunder affixed, have agreed to unite in earnestly requesting you ministering brethren to attend such a meeting." Richard Pace signed this call for Ocmulgee Association, along with Jesse Mercer for Georgia Association, Reuben Thornton for Sarepta Association; C. A. Tharp for Ebenezer Association and others, one from each of the Associations.

The meeting was well attended, and its proceeds were reported in detail in The Christian Index of July 28, 1836. Its first action was the appointment of a committee of seven members, of which committed Richard Pace was one, to "arrange the business suitable to come before the meeting." The result of this meeting was the signing of a confession of faith agreeable to almost all of those in attendance, and the agreement on the propositions that differences of opinion on "benevolent institutions" was not ground for non-fellowship, and that the independence of the individual churches should never be infringed. This meeting was the most important ever held by the denomination in Georgia, took a sharp turn, upwards.

Each year, Richard Pace had been unanimously re-elected pastor of both Crooked Creek and Harmony Churches. He now planned to remove to the newly-opened Creek Country in Alabama. At the annual conference Crooked Creek Church in July 1836, he was elected to serve until the next conference, and the date of the annual conference changed from July to December. In December, election of a pastor for the next year was continued until the January Conference, and letters of dismission were granted him and his family. In January 1837, Elder Pace preached his last sermon for this congregation, and presided over his last church conference there.

The exact date of his removal to Alabama is not known, due to the loss of the minutes of most of the old
churches and of the Tallasseehatchee Association. The minutes of Mount Zion Church (Ref: In the Alabama Dept. of Archives & History, Montgomery, Ala.), at Alexandria in Calhoun County, record that the pastor did not attend the church conference in February 1838, and that the day following, "Elder Pace closed the services for the day." In April of the same year, the minutes record "Elder Pace in the chair" and, in December 1838, "the church being without a pastor, Elder R. Pace was chosen by the unanimous vote of the church for one year."

There followed for Mount Zion Church the period of greatest growth, its largest and strongest membership (said to have been one of the wealthiest of any of the Baptist Churches in the State, Anniston Evening Star, undated clipping in the foregoing minute book), and the most widely extended influence of its entire history. Elder Pace was unanimously re-elected pastor each year until 1842, when the minutes state that "it was unanimously resolved that Bro. R. Pace shall act as pastor of this church so long as it shall be satisfactory to the church and himself." He served as pastor of this church until 1853, when he declined re-election, and shortly thereafter removed to Walker County, Texas, where he died November 28, 1858, in his 74th year. While he often preached, he never again held a pastorate.

Elder Pace is known to have served also as pastor of the Baptist Church in Jacksonville and in Talladega (Ala), and of the Cane Creek Baptist Church in Calhoun County. There were probably others. All the churches served by him experienced a spiritual revival under his ministry, and long after his death told their grandchildren charming little anecdotes which had come down about him, and his quick wit and forceful illustrations. Among these is the account of how, on one occasion, when he was baptizing converts, he waded to the bank for the next candidate, who happened to be a very small woman, (Mrs. Snow), the young mother of the family, and picking her up in his arms, as one would a child, he administered the ordinance of baptism, and added that that was the way to baptize babies. Another relates how, when the missionary and the anti-missionary feeling was running high, his brother, Barnabas, an anti missionary, was moderator of the Association which both were attending. Elder Richard Pace is said to have called those who were pro missionary to meet him in the church grove, which was done, and there he then organized and presided over a pro missionary association while his brother continued to preside over the anti missionary association in the church. (This account has also been read in a newspaper article, but the name of the newspaper
and date of publication has been forgotten by the writer.

It is still related, in Edgefield County, S.C., how the
brothers would visit there together and argue religion by
the hour, to the delight and edification of all around.

He was pronounced by Hosea Holcombe, "an indeatib-
able worker in the Lord’s vineyards." (History of the
Baptist in Alabama, page 285. In 1845, he was moder­
or of the Tallasseeatchee Association, though details
of his work in that association are lacking due to the
loss of its minutes. In 1849, he was chosen moderator
of the Coosa River Association, and at some time during
practically every session of the latter Association, he
was chosen to preach, a fact which bears eloquent testi-
mony to his power as a preacher. The esteem in which he
was held is shown by the fact that, both in Georgia and in
Alabama, delegations came, often, from churches both near
and far to request his aid on presbyteries and in settling
differences within their ranks. He was called up from as
far, almost to the Tennessee line in Alabama and across the
entire State of Georgia. Elder Samuel Henderson in his
series of articles entitled, "Our Worthy Dead," (Ref:
The Alabama Baptist, January 18, 1833), said of him:

"I first met this good man in the summer of
1838 or '39. He had then lately settled near
the village of Alexandria, in Calhoun County,
Ala., and had removed from the State of
Georgia, his native state, I believe. It was
in the middle of summer and the day was very
warm. He came down to visit the old Salem
Church, about twelve miles from the town of
Talladega, on Choccolocco Creek. I well
recall the impression he made on me. Tall,
grave, with a stalwart frame weighing nearly
or quite two hundred pounds, rather rough and
ruddy visage, gray with fifty-five or sixty
winters, and altogether one of the most
imposing men I ever knew. The only relief
about his countenance when he reposed that
indicated the benevolent, genial spirit within
was a pleasant twinkle about his eye, assuring
you that that rough exterior carried behind it
one of the most confiding, generous hearts one
ever meets. He was dressed in light linen
clothes, preached about two hours, without the
slightest weariness to the large congregation
assembled, and when he finished there was
scarcely a dry thread in his clothing. For
when he preached, he did it with all his might."

That was written nearly a half century afterwards! Elder Pace had been out of the state for thirty years, and dead for a quarter of a century. Elder Henderson continues, (The University of Georgia, the first institution of its kine in Georgia, was not founded until Richard Pace was already grown. He was traditionally educated at home by tutors):

"As a preacher, Mr. Pace ranked high, for although he enjoyed few educational advantages in early life, he was a close student, and had provided himself with a choice though not extensive or library of standard works. These he had read and studied with care, and had pretty thoroughly mastered their contents. Never to have studied English grammar, he was certainly the best natural grammarian I ever heard speak in public. One might hear him preach for one hour and never detect a blunder that would grate upon his ear. His massive intellect and good sense seem to have been in the whole philosophy of language by a kind of absorption so that he could come as nearly saying what he wanted to say, as you would have said it, and and our best scholars could do. If, while speaking, he ever hesitated, it was but for an instant, A peculiar shrug of his shoulders with a slight drawl in his voice, and the right word come, and come with power. His power over an audience was complete. From the moment he announced his text until he finished his discourse, he seldom relaxed his hold upon his congregation; and two hours was no uncommon length for his sermons."

Among the anecdotes about Elder Pace which has been handed down by word of mouth in his section is that he was particularly fond of botanical experiments, that he evolved a double rose from a native wild sweetbriar rose, and used it for a hedge, and that he developed a particular fine peach from the native Indian peach, one which was carried in the Breckman catalogs, near Augusta, GA., until some twenty years or so ago. Elder Henderson continues:

"In his doctrinal sentiments, Mr. Pace was a high Calvinist, and his sermons
literally bristled with the strongest views of that system. The divine side of these strong doctrines, so absorbed his mind that he seldom saw the human side, if, as he would say, there is such a side. The fault of his Theology was, that it gave too little scope to human agency. Certainly the Bible does appeal to man's moral consciousness, certainly the very idea of a divine revelation does presume the existence in man of such capacities as make him accountable. And yet, his home church of which he was pastor for about eighteen years, grew to be one of the largest churches in that part of the State. His preaching was singularly impressive. He had the happy attitude of so presenting the grand doctrines of God's discriminating grace, and of incorporating them into the experiences of Christian people, as that he was deifying to all. I remember a saying of the old man when showing the absurdity of the American theory of salvation as partly human and partly divine, that it would change the whole song of the redeemed in heaven, and it would be "glory to me and the Lord."

Elder Henderson continues about Richard Pace's preaching:

"Salvation by grace was the theme of his sermon always and everywhere. The 'Five Points' stood out in bold relief in every sermon: Grace in our election, in our effectual calling, in our justification, in our assured perseverance, and in our eternal salvation. In the matter of salvation, the creature was nothing, the Creator everything. He had studied the 'Common Law' as it is called, as expounded in 'Blackstone's Commentaries,' and had acquainted himself with many of its leading principles, and he often referred to them to clinch an argument. I recollect he once understood to show the utter helplessness of a sinner, 'already condemned' in effecting his deliverance. 'Why, said he, 'a man condemned' to death by the laws of the land is dead in law from the moment of his condemnation. He has no right of common citizenship any more than if he were lying in his grave. He can not ever make a will. And so is every being on earth in a state of sin. They are dead in trespasses and sins, and are as incapable of
effecting their citizenship in the kingdom of Christ as the poor condemned criminal in his cell is in working out his forfeited citizenship in any civil government. The pardoning power, as lodged in the Chief Executive, is the only power that could relieve either. He came down on that point with a power that left an impression not soon to be forgotten."

Elder Henderson tells the following anecdote of his own relationship with Richard Pace:

"The reader will excuse me if I mention an incident that occurred between Father Pace and myself, about forty years ago, as it will illustrate one of the noblest traits of his character, his sympathy for young ministers. I had only been preaching a short time, and for some cause, had gotten into a very gloomy state of mind. I began to question my motives for preaching, and well nigh reached the conclusion that I ought to quit, and turn my attention to some other calling. In this state of mind I concluded to pay a visit to Father Pace, who lived nearly thirty miles from me, and lay the whole case before him and get his advice. I made the trip, had no other business than that. The old man met me at his gate, and invited me in with great cordiality."

"After tea, as we were sitting around his fire, I mentioned the object of my visit, and detailed to him my doubts and fears in no stinted terms. The old man listened with deep attention, and as I closed my gloomy story, he wept, and assured me that he had the like trials, and gave me, as nearly as I can recall, this statement as to how he overcame them: 'I always had an abiding conviction,' he said, 'that I ought to do something in the cause of my Master, and I felt better when I tried to preach than when I did not. And then I concluded that I would bring more discredit to that cause by going back than by going forward. And then my final conclusion was, a conclusion of which I have rested from that day till now, that it could not be wrong to tell people to do right."

"That interview settled my mind more thoroughly than any event of my ministerial life, for that question has not seriously disturbed me from that day to this."
Elder Henderson pays his tribute to Elder Pace:

"No man stood higher than he both for his piety and rare gifts. His real strength in the pulpit lay in edifying Christians. In this respect he scarcely had a superior amongst us. A few of our older brethren still remember him with an affection bordering on veneration. To know him intimately and tenderly once, was to place his image on the tablet of memory there to remain to the last hour of life."

Richard Pace and his wife and nine children, of whom two died in infancy. His only surviving son, Virgil Homer Pace, removed to Walker County, Texas, as did his two youngest daughters, Nancy, wife of Samuel Purrus Montgomery, and Virginia Hill, wife of Benjamin Gerald Kelly. His eldest child, Mary, wife of John Paschal, lived and died in Morgan County, Georgia. His daughters, Lucretia and Lucinda, married in Georgia, but removed to Alabama, and died there, while his daughter, Amie Elizabeth, who presided over his household in Alabama after the death of her mother, married in Alabama, Samuel Camp Kelly, and became the mother of Dr. William Pace Kelly and Judge Richard Bussey Kelly.

As a laborer in the Lord's vineyard in the early days of this section, he did his work well, and his good works live after him in the strength of the Baptist denomination where he labored.

******

-213-
December 5, 1984

Dear Editors:

Recently my Aunt Louise Pace Jackson, let me make a tape of her stories of her family. They lived in Cunningham District, Fluvanna County, Virginia, until 1918, when they moved to Georgia.

There were many delightful human interest stories in my Aunt's account. These helped me know more of my father and aunts and uncles, as they were growing up. There were, also, fresh bits of genealogical material brought to the surface. Perhaps some of this would give material for the newspaper and help find the connection to other Pace lines.

The earliest Census Record of my Paces, is the 1850 Fluvanna County:

| Family #235 | James Pace   | 40  | VA |
|            | Mary Pace    | 22  | VA |
|            | Lucy J. Pace | 3   | VA |
|            | John W. Pace | 2   | VA |
|            | Mary E. Pace | 4/12| VA |

This would be my Aunt Louise's grandparents and aunts and uncles before her father was born.

In 1860 Census, Fluvanna County, Virginia, shows the absence of James Pace, leaving Mary, age 34, as head of the family. Mary's maiden name was Champion, and there was a Champion family just two houses away. Lucy J. was 14 and Mary E. was 10 years of age. My grandfather, Charles M. was 7. His two younger brothers were: Philip J. 4; and Champion H., 1. My Aunt Louise feels that the John W. from the previous Census, must have died. She also believes her Father, Charles Moore Pace, was born in Fluvanna County; her Mother, Nannie B. Childress, was born either in Fluvanna or Albemarle County. Her father's old home was not far from theirs, near Shores, where his mother and two sisters lived. (The marriage license shows, in 1880, Charles M. Pace, 25 and Nannie B. Childress, 19, both born and both residing in Fluvanna County).

I had heard that Charles Moore Pace had gone out west on a wagon train. My aunt said that it was probably when he went...
out to California and worked in the San Joaquin Valley for four years. When he came back to marry Grandmother, he wanted her to go back with him, but she wouldn't go, so they stayed in Virginia.

One of the brothers, Philip, I believe, moved to Kentucky. Charles Moore Pace became a farmer, also raising tobacco. He and Nannie were the parents of nine children:

Alberta W., b. 1883, mar. H. Hulver & E. Jackson
Edgar L., b. 1884, mar. Carrie Cowart
Oscar, b. 1886, died 1889
Russell H., b. 1888, mar. Minnie Reagan
Annie Lula, b. 1890, d. 1893
Angie L., b. 1892, never married
Harvey Beckwith, b. 1896, mar. Berta Ford (my parents)
Mary Nannie, b. 1899, mar. William McDonald
Kate Louise, b. 1901, mar. Roscoe Jackson

After the children grew up and went out on their own, the parents began feeling their years, with the help of severe Virginia winters.

Alberta (Berta), widowed with an infant son, had been invited to go to live in Atlanta, GA with her Uncle C. C. Childress and his family. Edgar and Russell also were in Georgia working on C. C.'s farm. Mary (May) and Louise were still in Virginia, but away at school, and Harvey was working on another farm.

So, in 1918, the family in Virginia moved to Georgia where they could enjoy milder climate. After getting their bearings, they bought a home in Charleston, just east of Atlanta.

Elizabeth Nannie Pace died October 7, 1938, and was buried at Redan Cemetery. Her death certificate lists her father as Benjamin Childers (Childress), mother as Nannie Herndon.

Charles Moore Pace died the following year, 1939, December 25th. His father was listed as Henry Pace (James Henry or Henry James) and his mother as Mary Champion.

Here in the Greater Atlanta area are descendants of Alberta Pace Jackson, Russell Pace and my father, Harvey Pace.

In trying to relate our Paces to the descendants of Richard Pace who came to this country from England, I have had no luck. I have read Mrs. Kelley's work and the accounts of
Barnabus Pace and can find no relation; neither in the Vinings, Georgia Paces. Mrs. Buice has given me a glimmer of hope, in that my grandfather’s middle name was Moore, and (in her line, I believe) a Tabitha Pace married a Moore.

So, I am still searching, and any help will be appreciated.

Kathy Pace Best
1538 Aragon Way
Atlanta, GA 30319

NOTE: There are bits and pieces scattered about here and there and the foregoing letter from Kathy Best was among Eleanor Terrell’s files along with the Maud McLure Kelly papers. For that reason I pass the information along to you. However, in 1995, I do believe that a connection has been made between the Pace’s of Vinings, GA and Richard Pace and Isabella. (That would be Hardy Pace line)
Richard Pace, the immigrant, is supposed to have come to Virginia in 1610 with Sir Thomas Gates and Sir William Somers, but this has not been proved. That he did come, that his wife was named Isabella, and that his oldest son and heir-at-law was named George Pace is proved by the land grants to Isabella, then wife of William Perry, and to George Pace, in September 1628, as shown in Cavaliers & Pioneers, p. 10.

Richard Pace carried the warning of the impending Indian attack on Good Friday, 22 March 1622, and thus saved Jamestown. After the massacre, he elected to stay in Virginia, and petitioned for leave to return to his plantation which was granted as shown in the Records of the Virginia Company, Vol. III, pp. 494 and 682, and Vol. IV, p. 555.

Among other references to see, the following:

Cridlin's Colonial Virginia, p. 68.
Campbell's History of the Colony of Virginia, p. 29.
Wertenbaker's Virginia Under the Stuarts, p. 48.
"First Republic in America" pp 408, 468, 621.

Captain Samuel Macock, of the first Council, was killed in the Great Massacre in 1622, leaving an only daughter, Sarah, who married George Pace. In the Colonial Church In Virginia, by Goodwin, there is the following about him:

"Macock, Samuel: Admitted Sizar at Jesus College, Cambridge, May 18, 1611. Son of Roger, husbandman,

In William and Mary Quarterly (second series) Vol. 15, p. 233, in an article on the education of the Indians of Virginia, it is said that Patrick Copland, "Preacher to the Navy and Fleet of the East India Company," took an Indian to England in an effort to get money for schools, and that the "seed of a great enterprise has been sown. Samuel Macock, a Cambridge scholar, was appointed a member of Governor Yeardley's Council, along with three ordained ministers to assist in organizing the project."

It is not known whom he married, but some theorize that his wife was probably a daughter of Captain William Pierce, the owner of the adjoining plantation, and whose daughter, Joan, married Captain John Rolfe, who was killed in the Great Massacre. Afterwards, Joan (Pierce) Rolfe married Captain Roger Smith, and in their household, in January 1623, in addition to her daughter, Elizabeth Rolfe, there were also Sarah Macock, "aged 2, borne in Virginia," and one Elizabeth Salter. If Sarah Macock's mother was a sister of Mrs. Roger Smith, that would explain Sarah's presence in that family at that time, as given in "The List of the Living" of 1623.

Maycox, as the seat of Captain Samuel Macock, was called passed to George Pace, upon his marriage to Sarah Macock to him, and by a sale by him in 1650, confirmed in 1659 by his son Richard Pace, it passed from the family. In 1774, it passed by purchase into the Meade family, from which it later passed in turn. It is situated on the James River, across from Westover, where George Pace's step-father, William Perry, lies buried. For interesting side-lights on "Maycox" see the following references:

William & Mary Quarterly (1 series) 13, p. 89
11 p. 89, 60

-218-
"Att a court held May 8, 1626, being present Sir Francis Wyatt, Governor, Capt. Francis West, Captain Roger Smit, Capt. Samuel Matthews, Mr. William Claybourne, it is ordered yt Sara Maycock for four servants brought over in the Abigail, in 1622, upon the accompt of Mr. Samuel Maycock, shall have 200 acres of land to be taken up by her in any place not formerly taken up."

SECOND GENERATION

George Pace, the son and heir of Richard Pace, was granted Pace's Pains on 1 Sept. 1628, of which 100 acres was due for the personal adventure of his father and 300 acres for the transportation of certain persons in the patent, as shown in Cavaliers & Pioneers, page 10.

On 1 August 1650, he patented 1,700 acres in Charles City County, "lying on the south side of the James River, commonly called 'Matocks', for the transportation of 34 persons and on 6 December 1652, additional acres, 506, in the same county, for the transportation of 10 persons, these grants being abstracted in Cavaliers & Pioneers, pp 199 and 273. He is apparently, the "Mr. Pace" referred to as adjoining property owner in the same book at pages 347 and 380.

That he married Sarah Macock and that his eldest son was Richard Pace is shown by a deed recorded in Charles City County Court Records, 1655-1665, p. 179.

"Know all men by these presents and witnesse that I, Richard Pace sonne and heir apparent of Mr. George Pace of the County of Charles City at Mount March in Virginia and sonn and heire as the first issue by my mother, Mrs. Sarah Macocke, wife unto my aforesaid father, (being both dec'd) do hereby by these presents for my self my heirs exors adm'rs and asens for ever absolutely confirme and allow of the sale of eight or nine hundred acres of land being neere unto Pierce's hundred als ffloryday hundred, sold by my dec'd father Mr. George Pace unto Mr. Thomas Drewe as per Bill of sale bearing date the 12th day of October 1650 may more large app'r....Richard Pace further confirms sale to Thomas Drewe...Dated 25 Feb. 1658/9.

Wit: Richard Pace
Anthony Wyatt, Thomas Stogge
Neel Pryse, Cl. Recorded 19 May 1659

-219-
This is also quoted in _Cradle of the Republic_ by Tyler, p. 212.

From the foregoing instrument, we know that George Pace married Sarah Macock, sold this property late in 1650 and died before 1659 and that his eldest son was named Richard and that he was born before 1638. We also know that Sarah (Macock) Pace was also dead by 1659 and that she was born about 1620-1621.

**THIRD GENERATION**

Richard Pace, the son and heir of George Pace, "as the first issue by my mother Mrs. Sarah Macock, wife of my afore­said father," as he called himself in the deed of 1659, was still a minor when his father died, as shown by the following items from the Charles City County Record Book 1655-1665:

"Whereas Richard Pace the orphan and heire of George Pace, dec'd hath at this co'rt made choice of and humbly desireth confirmac' on Mr. William Baugh to be the guardian of him and his estate dureing his minority. The Co'rt doth therefore hereby grant and confirms his sd. request requir­ing the sd guardian to manage duly and justly all estate belonging to the sd. orphans giveing yearly acco't to the Co'rt of the same and the improvement delivering the whole to the sd orphane at his full age." January 4, 1655, pg. 5.

Though a minor on January 4, 1655, he was of age by February 25, 1658/9, however, when he confirmed a previous sale of his father of certain land, as shown at page 179 of this record. He was therefore born after 1634 and before 1638.

There are several references to him in this record book of Charles City County, VA, including a deed dated 11 February 1659/60, in which he as "of Powell's Creek" sells land but without the release of dower by a wife. The first reference in the records, so far found, to a wife is in a deed dated 13 March 1661, and recorded at page 327 of this same record book, in which he sells land on Powell's Creek to Richard Taylor "with ye consent of my wife Mary Pace."

The last reference found is in 1673, in _Colonial Abstracts_, Vol. 13, page 84. He evidently lived in that part of Charles City County which in 1702 became Prince
George County, as there are found in the one book extant of the records of that county, references to Paces bearing the suggestive names of George, Richard, John, James and Thomas, all given by Winnefred (Aycock) Lane as the names of her grandfather or his brothers. The exact location of his home, after "Maycox" is not now definitely known, but was probably in the Three Creeks section. This would make a reasonable basis for the tradition recorded by Winnifred Lane as to its being "in a county in Virginia where five counties meet," because, until the county boundaries were actually surveyed out, there was no accurate or definite knowledge about the county liens in that general section of the Province.

The surname of Mary, wife of Richard Pace, is not known. From the reference in Virginia Colonial Abstracts, Vol. 13, pg 14, to Richard Baker as having had "late in his tuition" Richard Pace and John Rosser and Bakers having also been neighbors and friends in later years in North Carolina, there is a possibility that she was a Baker but this is not proved. She outlived her husband, according to Winnefred Lane.

The family history, written in 1791, by his granddaughter, Winnefred Lane, then aged 50, directly links this Richrd Pace to Richard Pace, the third of the name, who died in Bertie Precinct, North Carolina.

Charles City County Order Book, 1677-9, pg. 270, Mary Pace granted administration on estate of Richard Pace, deceased 1677. Page 279, Thomas Douglas and Captain Jordan appointed to appraise estate, on April 19, 1679. Charles City County Order Book 1687-1695, pg. 409, August 3, 1692, "the matter of the account of Thomas Kirkland vs Nicholas Whitmore and Mary his wife, Admx of Richard Pace, one of the exors of Hugh Kirkland is referred to Captain Taylor and Captain Perry for audit."

TO WHOM IT MAY CONCERN:

I hereby certify that the data given below is verbatim copy of part of the family record which Mrs. Louise Kendall Rogers possessed in her lifetime. I copied the entire record and the Bible record from the original which has been in our family for years. This record is so dim and so torn the last time I saw it that I doubt if it is legible now.

-221-
I do not know to which of her children Mrs. Rogers left the original. I do know that my copy is correct. I have photostat of land grant to Richard Pace 1706.

DATA: Lineage of the House of Wynneford Aycock and her husband, Jessee Lane, all of Virginia. Written by herself,

EXTRACT FROM PARAGRAPH (6) SIX:

"My mother's name was Rebeckah Pace. She was born in the Colony of Virginia. She was married to Mr. William Bradford when she came to North Carolina in 1704. My grandfather's father was named Richard, too. He lived in Virginia. Grandfather Pace had four brothers and three sisters, and all of them married and every one of them named one of the boys Richard because it was a family name. Grandfather Pace spelled the name Pase sometimes and he died before I was born, but I know my mother came to Chowan in Albemarle in North Carolina and she told me they lived on a river near a creek in Virginia that was next to her Grandmother's house. My mother was born in a county in Virginia that is where five counties meet. She said she was the oldest girl and her sister Mary was next. Mother knew three of grandfather's brothers, Uncle Thomas, Uncle John and Uncle George, but she never knew Uncle James, as he moved away. She said that her three aunts had been to North Carolina and had visited them. Aunt Elizabeth lived in the old home place, but Aunt Ann and Aunt Sarah moved to South Carolina. Grandfather was Richard Pace, Jr. I married in Johnston County and came to Georgia with a colony of North Carolinians in 1784. My mother died before I came here. She had two Bradford children, John and Tabitha."

The sketch from which this extract is taken was written in 1791 by Mrs. Winnefred Lane for her daughter, who afterwards gave it to her sister, Winnefred (Mrs. James P. Rogers) my grandmother and Mrs. Loula Kendall Rogers grandmother. Signed Annie B. Jones

(From a copy given to Maud McLure Kelly by Miss Annie B. Jones, and signed by Miss Jones, then of Decatur, Georgia, some years ago).
FOURTH GENERATION

Richard Pace, the third of the name in this line, was born in Virginia and removed from there to North Carolina, according to both his granddaughter Winnefred Land and his great grandson, Rev. Barnabas Pace from another branch of the family. This is corroborated by A Lords Proprietors' deed, dated 1706, which is on exhibition in the Hall of History, Raleigh, North Carolina and by the fragments of early records of Brunswick County, Virginia. It should also be remembered that the section of North Carolina in which he settled was claimed by Virginia until after the boundary line was surveyed about 1728 by a joint commission, the southern boundaries of Prince George and Surry Counties, Virginia, and the northern line of Bertie Precinct, North Carolina, being in dispute.

The few facts known of this Richard Pace indicate he was a solid, substantial citizen. In 1723, his name appears as #130 on the North Carolina jury list, and in 1727 when the parish was divided and a new Northwest Parish created (which later became Northampton County), he was named as a Vestryman. See North Carolina Colonial Records, Vol XXV, pp 189 and 210.

From his will, a copy of which is attached, it appears that he had already provided for his eldest son, Richard, and for all of his daughters and partially for his second son, William. See also list of land grants attached. The Morratuck was the Roanoke River.

State Lane Office
Richmond Virginia
Patent Book 10, Page 389
Date: 12 July 1718

To Richard Pace of the County of Surry:

285 acres on the north side of the Three Creeks in said county of Surry. Beginning at a white oak on ye Creek side a corner of Captain John Gaddis' land, thence by Gaddis' line east...to a lightwood post in George Hamilton's line, thence by Hamilton's line north...to a lightwood post a corner of George Passmore's land, thence by Pass Moore's line northeast...to a poplar by the side of the Three Creeks afore-said and down the various courses of the run of the said creek to the beginning.
Ref: Ibid, Patent Book 12, p. 116, 5 November 1724. To Richard Pace of Surry County: 1,220 acres between the Three Creeks and the Otterdam Swamp, beginning at mouth of the Indian Branch on the west side of the Otterdam Swamp. (E. B. the Three Creeks and Otterdam Swamp were formerly in Surry County, thence Brunswick County, and are now in the northern portion of Greenville County).

Brunswick County, VA, Deeds, Wills & C, No. 1, page 53. Date ____1733 (?), Johnson's lease from Pace, 300 acres, (badly mutilated):

____ace of Bart____. Will ____n of the County. Witnesseth that the ____ichard Pace for and in consideration of the sum of five shillings & c in hand paid the Ric____whereof he hereby acknowledge ______and discharge the said ____liam Johnson, his Execors. A certain tract or parcel of land ____wick aforesaid and ____north side of ____ hundred acres more or less, being part of a tract ____the said Pace bypatent bearing date the fi____thousand seven hundred & twenty four _____, beginning at a white oak a corner of Nathaniel Harrison's line standing upon the side of the Cow Trap (Nap) Branch, running thence with a markt line to the main road to an Hiccory, thence with a markt line to a scrub oak standing upon the aforesaid Pace's line, then wh the said line to a corner tree standing on Ryars (Bryars) Branch thence down the said branch to Nathaniel Harrison's line, then with the said line to where it first began____unto the said William Johnson____chard Pace.

Ref: Brunswick County, VA, Deeds, Wills & C No. 1, p. 54, Date 7 June 1733, Proved 7 June 1733:

Richard Pace of Bertie Precinct in North Carolina and William Johnson of the County of Brunswick -- BADLY MUTILATED, but the release to the above lease. "____being on the North side of Ryars Branch in the ____ aforesaid containing three hundred acres."

Ref: Brunswick County, VA, Deeds, Wills 7C No. 1, pp 56-57. Date 2 173__, Proved 7 June 1733:

Richard Pace of Bertie Precinct in North Carolina and John Bradford of the County of Brunswick. Consideration (lease) five shillings. description, 680 acres all being between the Three Creeks____seven hundred twenty four ____Hubard Carrell and William
Johnson It being the remaining part of the aforesaid twelve hun__

Ref: Brunswick County, VA, Deeds, Wills & C. No. 1, pp 58-59. Date__ so badly mutilated that little can be read except a few words: "Hubard Car__containing two ____being part of tract ____bearing date the fifth day of____ twenty four."

From Index to Land Grants, Secretary of State's Office, Raleigh, N. C. in Bertie County:

George Pace, 140 A., 1 Dec. 1727, Vol 15, p. 108
185 " " " " " " 3p. 245
140 " " " " " " 3p. 245
360 " " " " " " 3p. 246
140 " " " " " " 13 p. 85

all on the south side of the Morattock

To William Pace, four land grants, each dated 10 March 1740, each for 130 acres, recorded in Vol. 4 at pages 72 and 164 and Vol. 5 at pages 55 and 125.

In Chowan County:

To James Pace, 630 acres, granted 1 March 1719, on north side of the Morattock River, recorded in Vol. 8 at page 175.

To Richard Pace Jr., two grants, one for 500 acres and one for 640 acres, both dated 1 March 1719, the land in the first lying on the north side of the Morattock River, location not given in the second, recorded in Vol. 8, at pages 195 and 174.

In Northampton County:

To Richard Pace, 200 acres on southwest side of Stony Hill Pocoson, issued 16 November 1743, recorded Vol. 5, page 171 and 200 acres, same location, issued 27 November 1744, recorded Vol. 10 at page 20.

To William Pace 48 acres, entered 1754, issued 21 February 1760, recorded Vol. 14, page 305.

To Solomon Pace, 230 acres adjoining Hardy Pace, entered 1780, issued 1782, recorded Vol. 48, page 271.

-225-
IN THE NAME OF GOD AMEN: The thirteenth day of March 1736, I, Richard Pace of Bertie Precinct of North Carolina being of sound and perfect mind and memory Thanks be given to God, Do make and ordain this my Last Will and Testament. Principally and first of all I recommend my soul into ye hands of God that gave it, hoping through the merits death and passion of my Saviour Jesus Christ to have free pardon and forgiveness of all my sins, and my body I commit to ye earth to be decently interred; and as touching my worldly estate I dispose of ye same in ye following manner and form: That is to say:

First--I will that all those debts and duties as I do owe in right or conscience to any person or persons shall be truly contented and paid by my Executor hereafter named.

ITEM: I give and bequeath unto my son William Pace that plantation with one hundred and ninety acres of land thereto belonging, where he now lives, to him and his heirs for ever.

ITEM: I give and bequeath to my son Thomas Pace and his heirs forever my plantation where I now live with three hundred and twenty acres of land hereto belonging, reserving unto my dearly beloved wife Rebecca Pace ye sole use & benefit thereof during her natural life.

ITEM. I give unto my son Richard Pace five shillings silver money.

ITEM: I give unto my daughters, Ann Steward, Rebecka Bradford, Amy Green, Frances Green, Tabitha Moore, Mary Johnson, Sarah House, each of them five shillings silver money.

ITEM: I give and bequeath unto my son Thomas Pace my plantation on Roanoke River with two hundred and ninety acres of land thereto belonging, also ten head of cattle, one feather bed and furniture, four pewter dishes, six pewter plates, two pewter basons, two iron pots, one skillet, one frying pan, to him and his heirs forever.
ITEM: I give and bequeath unto my loving wife Rebecka Pace all ye remainder of my estate of whatsoever kind to be by her quietly possessed during life, and after her decease to be equally divided between my two sons, William Pace and Thomas Pace for ye use and benefit of them and their heirs forever.

ITEM: I do hereby nominate and appoint my loving sons, William Pace and Thomas Pace my only Executors of this my Will ratifying and confirming this and no other to be my Last Will and Testament. In testimony whereof, I have hereunto set my hand and affixed my seal the day and year above written. Signed by Richard Pace.

Signed, sealed, published pronounced )
& declared by the said Richard Pace )
to be his Last Will and Testament )
in ye presence of us ye Subscribers:

J. Edwards )
William Boon ) Jurats
Benjamin Dukes )

Bertie ) February Court 1738
Precinct )

The aforementioned will of Richard Pace was duly proved in open Court by the oaths of John Edwards Esq., William Boone and Benjamin Dukes only subscribing witnesses thereto and William Pace and Thomas Pace Executors therein named took the Executors oath by law required. Test. John Wynns, Clerk. (From a photostat of the original will in the North Carolina Historical Commission, Raleigh, N.C.).

Also, see Grimes' Abstracts of North Carolina Wills, p. 276. "Impression of lion rampant on the seal."

FIFTH GENERATION

The next generation is another Richard Pace, the fourth in this line in Virginia. He was born in 1700 in Virginia, on the patrimonial estate of his father and his grandfather, and was his father's eldest son, according to his grandson, Rev. Barnabas Pace.
He patented land in Northampton, North Carolina, on the north side of the Roanoke River in 1743 and 1744, as shown by the list of land grants.

It has been stated that there are on record in Deed Book 2 of Northampton County, North Carolina, at pages 144, 146, 154 and 194, deeds from him to William Hilliard, Robert Nicholas, William Pace and Thomas Pace, bearing dates 8-28, 11-16, 5-10, and 1-18, in the year 1744, respectfully but this has not been verified other than contained in a long letter from the clerk of the county court, giving abstracts of all records found in his office relating to all of the name Pace found by him. If so, this would suggest that he moved from that county in 1744, to some other county or section.

In 1759, a petition filed previously by him for the grant of an island in the Savannah River was granted. In December 1762, a grant to him of land in St. Paul's Parish, Georgia, was signed. A deed from his grandson, recorded in Lincoln County, Georgia, refers to certain island in the Savannah River as granted to Richard Pace on December 16, 1762. This corroborates the account of Rev. Barnabas Pace as to his settling in South Carolina along the Savannah River about 1758.

The exact date of his death is unknown. His grandson, Rev. Barnabas Pace, who paid his a beautiful tribute, says he died just before the war. This is indirectly corroborated by the fact that his son, Richard Pace, was called "Richard Pace Jr." in 1775, according to a deed recorded in Edgefield County, South Carolina, in Deed Book 29, at page 67.

His grandson also stated that in his twenty-third year he married Elizabeth Cain. This would explain why "Richard Pace, Jun'r" witnessed the execution of the Will of William Cain, of Bertie Precinct, North Carolina, March 3, 1732.

His children, according to Rev. Barnabas Pace, were: James, Silas, Charles, Dredzil, Noel, Thomas, Drury, Barnabas and Richard, and four daughters whose names he did not give, one of whom married Arthur Fort, one O'Daniel, one Cox, and the fourth not given. The William Pace, on whose estate administration was granted in Richmond County, Georgia in 1790, was probably the tenth son.

My dear Son:

I have for several years intended to write you a
history of the Pace family so far as I have been personally acquainted with or have had it handed down to me tradition­ally by older branches of the family. And I wish you to keep up the history, and at your death turn it over to any one of your descendants........

HERE MAUD MCLURE KELLY QUOTES THE BARNABAS PACE LETTER WHICH CAN BE FOUND ON PAGES 160-190. SHE ALSO STATES THAT THE ORIGINAL BARNABAS PACE LETTER IS OWNED BY J. HARALSON PACE, AVONDALE ESTATES, GEORGIA, A GREAT-GRANDSON OF REV. BARNABAS PACE.

From: Index to Land Grants, Office of the Secretary of State of Georgia, Atlanta, Georgia:

Pace, Richard, St. Pauls Parish, recorded Vol D. page 241, grant of 22 acres in the year 1762.


Records of Edgefield County, South Carolina

Deed Book 29, page 67:

Richard Pace Jr., and Solomon Newsome Jr., to James Carson, deed dated June 12, 1775; Consideration L300, conveys 250 acres, part of 500 acres sold on January 4, 1744 by Robert Starke, Sheriff, to Richard Pace Jr. the highest bidder. Part of 600 acres granted to Solomon Newsome October 19, 1772. Witnesses: C. Hawkins, Charlotte Pace, David Sigler, Leroy Hammond, J.P.

Deed Book 29, page 64:

Richard Pace Jr., (signed "Richard Pace") and Solomon Newsome to John Carson, deed dated June 11, 1775, consideration L350, conveys 100 acres bounded northeast by Stephens Creek and on all other sides vacant, originally
Lincoln County, Georgia, Deed Book H, pp. 128-9:

Drury Pace to West Cook, both of Edgefield District, South Carolina, deed, dated January 6, 1808, conveys islands in the River granted to Richard Pace on December 16, 1762. Wit: Richard V. Pace, Enoch Sharpton.

Grimes, Abstracts of North Carolina Wills, p. 59:


North Carolina Colonial Records, Vol 4:

PP 522-524. Richard Pace added as Juror on the list for Bertie and Edgecombe Counties, February 1740. P. 710, Richard Pace petitioned for patent, 200 acres, Northampton County, November 27, 1744.

SIXTH GENERATION

Drury Pace, the son of Richard Pace and Elizabeth Cain, was born in Northampton County, North Carolina in October 1745, according to his son, Rev. Barnabas Pace, and married in 1768 Mary Bussey. His son's account of his service in the Revolution is corroborated in part in Salley's Stub Entries to indents for Revolutionary Services, R-T p. 292 and Y-Z p. 102, in which he appears as a Captain in the South Carolina militia, and to have lost a flat (or ferry boat) in the service of his country. He is listed in the First Census as living in Edgefield District, with two white males over 16, and under 16, five females and 8 slaves. His son Micajah and his daughter, Rebecca were therefore, already dead and all of his children were unmarried and living with him. His children were: William, Drury, Richard, Barnabas, Nancy, Fanny, Rhoda and Mary, as named in his will which is abstracted in "Georgia D.A.R. Chapters Historical Collection" Vol. II, page 50. His will was dated January 26, 1801.
probated May 4, 1801, and recorded in Volume of Wills, 1798-1840, at page 8, of Richmond County, Georgia, records. By it, he left his land in Edgefield County, S.C. to his sons, William and Drury, in Lincoln County, Georgia to his son Richard, and in Richmond County, GA to his son Barnabas, but his wife, Mary, was to have the use of all his land in Georgia for her life. He left slaves to his daughters, Nancy, Fanny, Rhody and Polly.

Traditionally, he died at the old village of Bedford, of which not a trace now remains. There are many references to him in the county records of both South Carolina and Georgia where he owned land. According to the card index in the Georgia Department of Archives and History, he was commissioned a Justice of the Peace of Richmond County, Georgia on February 21, 1796. In a deed recorded in Book F-2 of Deeds, at page 97 in the courthouse at Augusta, and dated December 3, 1795, he calls himself "of the State of Georgia." Among other references to him found in published books are:

- *Early Records of Georgia, Wilkes County, Vol. II*, p. 43
- *Georgia D.A.R. Chapter Hist. Collections, Vol. II*
- *South Carolina Baptist, by Townsend*, p. 177

The index to land grants in the office of the Secretary of State of Georgia shows a grant of 300 acres to him in 1786 (Vol. HHH, p. 914), and another grant of 67 acres to him, issued in 1802 (Vol. DD p. 601).

By deed recorded in Richmond County, Deed Book O, at page 42 dated June 8, 1811, Barnabas Pace sold two tracts of land in that county, 333 acres in all, one of the tracts surveyed in 1798 for Drury Pace and granted to him February 5, 1802, his wife Patsy releasing dower. This was not a quitclaim, so his mother was doubtless then dead. By another deed of the same date, recorded in same book at page 45, he quitclaimed certain land of his uncle Thomas Pace, who had predeceased Drury Pace, and who lived and died unmarried, in Richmond County.

**SEVENTH GENERATION**

With this generation, the name Richard Pace again comes in the line, and again there is a migration. Just as the first Richard moved to Virginia, and the next generation moved up the James River to Maycox, and the next Richard
sold and moved farther, and the following Richard moved to North Carolina and his son Richard moved to the Savannah River, and his son Drury established a ferry across the River, and then moved to Georgia, so the next generation took up the march and is listed by White as one of the first settlers in Putnam County when it was established in 1807.

His father, Drury Pace, was an active member of the Baptist Church. The son, Richard was ordained in 1822, and thenceforth was one of the leading ministers in the Baptist Church in the section. In 1838, the urge to migrate again came over him, and he removed to the newly ceded Indian lands in Benton (later Calhoun) County, Alabama where he remained until his removal to Texas, where he died in Walker County, November 28, 1858.

The original of the following was found among the papers of Amie Elizabeth (Pace) Kelly after her death, and is now owned by her granddaughter, Maud McLure Kelly:

```
Walker County, Texas
December 1st, 1858

My Dear Sister:

I received your letter on Sunday last, and at that time our venerable Father was struggling with the last enemy to human nature, and expired thirty-five minutes past two o'clock p.m. on the twenty-eight of November. He died in the triumphs of that religion that he so zealously preached for thirty-five years of his life. And altho his death might have been reasonably anticipated at any time considering his great age and oftin afflictions, yet we were not prepared for his exit, and it has cast a gloom over the circle in which he had so long occupied a place that none can realize wave those who have been bereaved.

But we grieve not as those that have no hope for we are assured that altho his earthly tabernacle is dissolved he is now occupying a place in that house not made with hands eternal in the heavens. We therefore exclaim not our will but thine 0 Lord be done and bow humbly to the dispensation of a merciful God who has spared our Pa's life so long, as a blessing to his family and to his fellowman. May we profit by his example and like him be
```

-232-
prepared for the summons when it comes for us so that we that are left may meet those that have gone before around the Throne of God to sing the song of the Lamb.

One week before he died we thought he was fast recovering from his attack in the summer and hoped that he might again be able to visit Alabama which he talked of doing this winter. On Tuesday he walked three times from my house to Nancie's, a distance of 1/2 mile on Wednesday complained of feeling bad not unusual on Thursday a little worse, sent for a physician, who came on Friday not considered dangerous. Sunday no better. I became uneasy. Saturday night at dark could not swallow or speak, his tongue was so much swollen, but seemed to be conscious till a few hours before he died.

He seemed to suffer a good deal great difficulty breathing (as his disease was in the lungs and throat, produced from cold) but a short time before he died his breathing improved and he breathed his last without a struggle as tho going into a sweet sleep. We dressed him in his white pants that he had had so long for the purpose satin vest, black cravat and black cloth frock coat and slippers. He was the most natural looking corpse that I ever saw, and looked as though his labors were done and he was sweetly taking his rest. We buried him decently in our church yard where he will await the resurrection morn. Peace be with him, beloved while living and long to be remembered, and honored now that he is dead.

He left a will he gave you Daniel as your part, Sim Weaver his Rail Road Stock, Paschal a small sum of money and the balance to be divided equally between the rest of us. Nancy has Joe and Becky, extra. I will send a copy of will to Alabama soon as I have not opened it yet.

V. H. Pace

All are well, write soon and let us hear from you.

V. H. P.

EIGHTH GENERATION

Amie Elizabeth Pace, as she spelled it, was the daughter of Rev. Richard Pace and his wife Amy Bussey. Her family data is given in the Bible records of her son, Richard Bussey Kelly.

Her husband, Samuel Kelly, was the son of Sims Kelly and his wife, Mary Camp. He was born in Franklin County,
Tennessee, but was only ten years old when his father moved to then Benton (now Calhoun) County, Alabama. His father was a deacon in the Mount Zion Baptist Church, of which Rev. Richard Pace was pastor.

He served in the Mexican War, in the 1st Alabama Volunteers, and saw service in Mexico. After his return, he married Amie Pace, and lived upon a farm of some 400 acres near Ladiga, in the same county in which he had always lived in Alabama. When the War Between the States came, he enlisted in Company E of the 30th Alabama, and was elected first lieutenant and soon thereafter captain of the Company "E". He went through the entire war, and was in command of his regiment at the surrender in North Carolina in 1865.

After the war, he moved to the town of Jacksonville to give his children better advantages in education, and later to Oxford, where he was mayor, deacon in the Baptist Church and one of the chief contributors in the building of Oxford College. He and his wife lie in the Oxford Cemetery, on a bluff overlooking the town, and the verse on his tombstone:

"There remaineth a rest to the people of God"

COPY OF RECORDS IN BIBLE OF RICHARD BUSSEY KELLY

On Title Page "American Bible Society---1883"
On Fly Leaf "R. B. Kelly/ Presented by his Dear Mother/ December 25, 1884."

Richard B. Kelly and Leona Bledsoe were married at Syllacauga, Talladega County, Alabama, October 10, 1880.
Leona Bledsoe was born near Syllacauga, Talladega County, Alabama on November 16, 1860.
Richard B. Kelly was born near Ladiga Calhoun County, Alabama, February 7, 1859
Francis Marion Kelly was born at Oxford, Alabama, July 30th 1881 at 1:10 p.m., Saturday.
James Robertson Kelly was born near Syllacauga, Alabama September 6th 1883 at 5:25 P.M., Thursday.
George Somerville Kelly was born near Syllacauga, Talladega County, Alabama on October 24th 1885 at 10:55 a.m. and died November 11th 1885 at 1:15 p.m. and was buried at Syllacauga, Alabama.
Maud Kelly was born near Syllacauga, Alabama on June 26, 1887 at 8:45 p.m., Sunday ("McLure" inserted as a middle name but not in original record).

-234-
Infant son, born near Syllacauga, Alabama on July 10, 1899 at 5:15 a.m., died 11 a.m. same day.

Infant daughter born at Anniston, Alabama on Saturday, November 22, 1890 at 9:25 p.m. & died May 16, 1891, 9:25 p.m., buried at Anniston.

Richard Bussey Kelly Jr., born at Anniston, Alabama, November 11, 1891 at 1:45 a.m. (Sunday).

Samuel Bledsoe Kelly born at Anniston, Ala, May 1, 1894 at 12:15 a.m. (Tuesday).

William Milner Kelly born Anniston, Ala. on Friday, June 5th, 1896 at 10:45 a.m.

Louisa Catharine Bledsoe died Anniston, Ala. on Monday May 17, 1897, at 12 o'clock m.

James Robertson Kelly died Anniston, Ala. July 8, 1897, at 2:45 a.m. (Thursday).

Maud Kelly united with Parker Memorial Baptist Church on July 25, 1897.

Samuel Bledsoe Kelly died in Gulfport, Miss, Wednesday, April 28, 1943, 7:50 p.m. and buried in Anniston, Ala. on April 30.

William Milner Kelly and Evelyn Letitia Lacy were married at Plantersville, Dallas County, Alabama, June 5, 1924. Their children are:

Mary Pettus Kelly b. April 19, 1925, Birmingham, Ala.
William Milner Kelly, b. June 11, 1927, Plantersville
Evelyn Letitia Lacy b. Aug. 26, 1902, Selma, Ala.,
daughter of Samuel C. & Evelyn H. Lacy
Leona Bledsoe Kelly died 7 Feb. 1945, at 7 p.m. in
Birmingham, buried Feb. 10 beside her husband

1. Sims Kelly born Wake County, N.C. March 11, 1784, died in Calhoun County, Ala, July 17, 1860
2. Mary Kelly born Warren County, Georgia January 20, 1788, died Calhoun County, Alabama September 1, 1864
3. Richard Pace born Edgefield District, S.C., August 9, 1785 and died Walker County, Texas Nov. 28, 1858
4. Amie Pace born Lincoln County, GA February 11, 1790 died Calhoun County, Alabama July 18, 1840
5. Sims Kelly and Mary Camp married Warren County, Georgia June 29, 1808
6. Richard Pace and Amie Bussey married Lincoln County, Georgia, December 28, 1805
7. Samuel Kelly and Amie Elizabeth Pace married at Mt. Zion Church, Calhoun County, Ala. by Rev. S. G. Jenkins, January 19, 1851
9. Samuel C. Kelly born in Franklin County, Tennessee, March 25, 1825
10. Amie E. Kelly born in Putnam County, GA, December 28, 1823
11. William P. Kelly born December 5, 1851
12. Albert Sidney Kelly born October 4, 1854 and died the same day
13. James Virgil Kelly born January 17, 1857, died Big Springs, Texas September 27, 1883
14. Sims C. Kelly & Richard B. Kelly (twins) born February 7, 1859 and Sims C. died same day
15. Barto Kelly born September 27, 1861 and died October 4, 1861

Samuel C. Kelly died at Oxford, Ala. Sept. 16, 1891
Amie E. Kelly died at Choccolocco, Ala. Sept. 22, 1897
Richard B. Kelly died at Birmingham, Ala, Thursday January 27, 1927 at 8 p.m. Funeral services at Southside Baptist Church 10 a.m. Saturday, Pastor J. E. Dillard and Dr. J. M. Morris, buried in Hillside Cemetery, Anniston, Ala, same day with Masonic honors.

Mary Pettus Kelly and Sam Robertson Moore, of Jackson, Mississippi, and descended also from Sims Kelly, were married May 25, 1946, in Birmingham, Ala. by Dr. John H. Buchanan, M. G.

NINTH GENERATION

The name "Richard" again comes in the line, this time without the surname Pace. Richard Bussey Kelly, son of Samuel Camp Kelly and his wife, Amie Elizabeth Pace, was prominent in Alabama in his day, as a lawyer, a statesman and a judge. For his family record, reference is made to the record in his Bible.

Notable Men of Alabama, by DuBose, Vol. 1, p. 323

STATE OF ALABAMA
MONTGOMERY COUNTY

Before me, the undersigned, a Notary Public in and for said County and State, personally appeared Maud McLure Kelly, who is known to me and who being duly sworn deposes and says that the foregoing is true and correct to the best of her information, knowledge and belief, that she herself personally abstracted the records in North Carolina, South
Carolina and Georgia herein shown, that the family history by Rev. Barnabas Pace was copied from a photostat of the original, which was of book length in its entirety, and that the source of all other data herein is as given herein.

She further deposes that the Bible records herein copied are from a Bible now owned by her, which was given to her by her father, Richard Bussey Kelly, in 1897, that all entries prior to and including 1897 are in the handwriting of her father, with which she is familiar, and that they agree in every respect with similar entries in her grandfather's Bible, which is now also owned by her, but that the entries in such Bible subsequent to 1897 are in her own handwriting, and that all of them were made at the time the recorded event occurred except the birth of Evelyn L. Kelly, which was made from her own statement.

(Signed) Maud McLure Kelly

SWORN TO AND SUBSCRIBED BEFORE ME
THIS 19th DAY OF FEBRUARY, 1947
(Signed) Wm. A. McMullen
Notary Public
Religion was a very important factor in the early days of Jamestown. One of the first buildings erected was a church. Samuel Maycock was a sizar at Jesus College, Cambridge, England, and reported to be highly spoken of by his contemporaries. A sizar was an undergraduate at Cambridge University, England, and Trinity College, Dublin, Ireland, who received aid from the college for maintenance.

(Virginia Magazine, Vol. 25, page 342)

Samuel Maycock was sent to Jamestown to serve as minister of the church, at the request of Governor Argall, in March 11617. His wife accompanied him.

(Page 92, Vol 111 Records of the Virginia Company)

In 1619, three new settlements or hundreds were established, namely, Flowerdieu Hundred, Martin's Hundred and Maycock's Hundred. The word "Hundred" is a term used by the English to designate a shire or parish. Originally it was supposed to have one hundred citizens or families in its jurisdiction.

Sir George Yeardley came to Virginia in 1619 and brought with him one of the most important documents ever sent the colony -- letters patent, granting permission to elect an assembly. This had come about by Sir Edwin Sandy's assuming command of the affairs of the London Company, in England. He was democratic and liberal in the administration of his office, and had abiding faith in the future of the Virginia Colony.

Each of the 11 Borroughs were authorized to elect two representatives. Governor Yeardley called the General Assembly to meet in Jamestown. This was to be the First Representative Legislative Assembly that ever met in America.

The Assembly was called the House of Burgesses, as Burroughs were represented, counties not yet formed, and the name was retained ever afterwards. Emulating the House of Commons, in England, they sat in the Assembly with their hats on.

-238-
On July 30, 1619, this first legislative assembly that convened on the American continent met in the church at Jamestown. It consisted of the Governor, six councillors, and 20 Burgesses -- two from each of the ten settlements. It was called the House of Burgesses. (Cridlin's History of Colonial Virginia).

The monument at Jamestown, in honor of this First Council of America and the Burgesses, who were members of the first House of Burgesses, list their names and includes Captain Francis West, Captain Nathaniel Powell, Master John Pory, Reverend Wicksham and Master Samuel Maycock.

In a letter in 1619 by Governor George Yeardley, to the Virginia Company in England, concerning the need for more counselors, he stated that "Mr. Maycock, who dwells at Charles Hundred, 40 miles from Jamestown, is diligent in attending the Council sessions and is, indeed, my chief strength in right."

Then, on 21 July 1612, the Virginia Company was issued "An order and declare that hence forward there be two Supreme Counsellors in Virginia for the better government of the said colony. The one of which to be called the Counsell of State and whose office shall chiefly be assisting with their care, advice, and circumspection to the Governor, shall be chosen, nominated, placed and displaced by the Company, and shall consist for the present only of Sir Francis Wyatt, Governor of Virginia, Captain Francis West, Sir George Yeardley, Mr. George Thorpe, Captain Nathaniel Powell, Mr. Roger Smith, Mr. John Rolfe, Mr. Samuel Maycock and 15 others."

"The other counsell to be called by the Governor yearly and for very extraordinary and important occasions and shall consist for the present of said counsell of State and of two Burgesses out of each hundred and particular plantations to be chosen by the inhabitants. Which Counsell shall be called the General Assembly, wherein all matters shall be decyded, determined and ordered by the greater part of the voyces than present, reserving always to the Governor a negative voyce; providing no law or ordinance made in said General Assembly shall be continued in force and validity unless only ratified and confirmed by the greater court here in England and so ratified to them under our seal."

-239-
"So the Right Reverend Samuel Maycock was not only a 'Minister of the Gospel' but also a capable manager and valuable adviser. In a discussion of the Governor's council-councillors he was termed 'a gentleman of birth, virtue and industry.'"

But disaster came. In the Massacre of 22 March 1622, Samuel Maycock, Edward Lister and Thomas Browne were all killed by the Indians. There is no mention of Samuel Maycock's wife or his infant daughter named Sarah. (Vol. 3, Records of the Virginia Company). This daughter had been born only a few weeks before the Massacre and the fact that she and her mother were not among those listed as killed was evidently due to the fact that Mrs. Maycock died in child-birth and little Sarah was being cared for by friends in Jamestown. The census of 1624 shows that little Sarah was born in Virginia, that she was two years of age at the time of the census, and was then living in the home of Captain Roger Smith.

Twelve or thirteen years after this census, that is, in 1636 or 1637, Sarah Maycock, the only child of Samuel Maycock, married George Pace, the only child of Richard Pace and Isabella Pace. She thereby passed the blood of Samuel Maycock to her and George Pace's only child, Richard Pace II, and his descendants.

The Maycock plantation was inherited by his infant daughter, Sarah. In Volume 4, pages 551 and 559, of the Records of the Virginia Company, there is listed "Extracts of all the titles and estates of land, sent to the Virginia Company by Governor Francis Wyatt in May 1625. On page 554 appears the following:

Mr. Samuel Macockes divident
Persey's hundred 1,000 acres planted
Tank Wayonoke over against Persey's hundred: 2,000 acres.

On page 555 there appears "Richard Pace, 200 acres planted." There is no mention of the remaining 400 acres owned by Richard Pace and his wife, Isabella.

The Maycock plantation was sold by Richard Pace (II), the son of George and Sarah Pace, to Thomas Drew. In 1774 the place was purchased by David Meade, whose horticultural development inspired an ecstatic commentator to say, "Forest and fruit trees are here arranged as if nature and
art had conspired together to strike the eye most agreeably."

There is a marker on Route 10 from Surry to Petersburg, Virginia as follows:

**Maycock Plantation**

Six Miles North, on James River, the place was patented about 1618 by Samuel Maycock, slain in the Massacre of 1622. In 1774 David Meade became the owner. There Cornwallis crossed the river May 24, 1781. Anthony Wayne crossed there August 30, 1781.

**GENERATION III, RICHARD PACE (II)**

Richard Pace (II) the son of George Pace and Sarah Maycock, was born in late 1637. He was their only known child. He was the grandson of Richard Pace (I) and Samuel Maycock, two of the most important and historical early colonists at Jamestown. Both played important parts in the protection, preservation and history of early Virginia. Both are honored today for their courage and devotion, and as representing two of the earliest families of Virginia.

It is quite unusual and exceptional, in fact, it may be the only incident in history, that the blood of both such gentlemen and patriots should be joined in one child, Richard Pace (II) who thence became the ancestor, and transmitted the blood of Richard Pace (I) and Samuel Maycock, to all of those who followed in the line after them.

There is today, as previously mentioned (1) the Historical Marker, erected by the Virginia Conservation Commission, regarding Pace's Paines, the home of Richard Pace (I) and his wife, Isabella, and in honor of Richard Pace (I) and the Indian boy, Chanco, for saving the English colony from total destruction.

This marker is not located near Pace's Paines, but is on Highway No. 10, about 3 1/2 or 4 miles west of Surry and 7 miles south of Pace's Paines. The inscription is as follows:

**PACE'S PAINES**

This place, seven miles north, was settled by Richard Pace in 1620. On the night before the Indian Massacre on March 22, 1622, an
Indian, Chanco, revealed the plot to Pace who reached Jamestown in time to save the settlers in that vicinity.

There is also the Historical Marker on Route 10, from Surry to Petersburg, in honor of Samuel Maycock, Minister, gentleman, scholar, member of the Governor's Council of State and of the House of Burgesses. The inscription is as follows:

**MAYCOCK PLANTATION**

Six miles north, on James River, the place was patented about 1618 by Samuel Maycock, slain in the Massacre of 1622. In 1774 David Meade became owner. There Cornwallis crossed the river May 24, 1781. Anthony Wayne crossed there August 30, 1781.

Call it fate or fortune, it is certainly not fiction that Richard Pace came to Jamestown during the period 1609-1611, and that Samuel Maycock, a minister, educated at Cambridge College, was sent to Jamestown in 1617 by the Virginia Company in London to serve as pastor of the first church built in Jamestown, and that Richard Pace, a devout christian, very likely was a regular member of his congregation.

No doubt Samuel Maycock often stopped at Pace's Paines to visit with Richard Pace and take him to Jamestown. On his way to Jamestown, Maycock would have to pass, on the south side of the river, Flowerdieu Hundred (Piercey's Hundred) 1618; Captain Spilman's Divident, before 1622; Ward's Plantation, 1619; Martin's Brandon, 1617; and Pace's Paines, 1620.

It may be added here that the Maycock Plantation often called "Master Maycock's Divident" as late as 1655 remained in the family of the George Paces. George and sarah were then dead, and their son, Richard Pace (II) applied for a guardianship.

(Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol 25, p. 342)

This application for appointment of a guardian is the first available record about Richard Pace (II). It is found in the Charles City Record Book 1655-1665, page 3,
dated January 4, 1665. and reads as follows:

Whereas Richard Pace, the orphan and heir of George Pace, deceased, has at this Court made choice of the humbly desire confirmation of Mr. William Baugh, the Court doth hereby grant and confirm his said request.

February 11, 1659, "Richard Pace of Powell's Creeke, planter," sold a "certain neck of land lying between the branch commonly called the western branch of Flower de Hundred Creek."

(Charles City County Record Book for 1655-1665, p. 249)

There are numerous other deeds of record in Charles City County between 1659 and 1665, by Richard Pace (II). He usually referred to himself as "planter" and John Drayton seems to have figured prominently in the various records made by Richard Pace. He and James Ward and Richard Taylor seem to be connected with Richard Pace very closely.

Fleet's Abstracts, Charles City County, Vol. 12, page 19, shows a deed dated 13 March 1661/2 by Richard Pace "with the consent of wife, Mary Pace" for "300 pounds sterling money of England" to Richard Taylor described as "land upon Powell's Creek to the road commonly called the "Hawknest" and so butting upon the ready bottom as far as William Wilkins plantation." Deed was also signed by Mary Pace.

In deed recorded May 19, 1659, Charles City County Book, abstracts by Fleet, Vol. 11, page 33 (179), Richard Pace (II) referred to himself as follows:

I, Richard Pace, sonne and heir apparent of Mr. George Pace of com. of Charles City att Mount Marsh in Virginia, and sonne and heire as the first issue of my mother, Mrs. Sarah Maycock, wife unto my aforesaid father (both being deceased).

In Virginia Colonial Abstracts, Vol. 13, page 512, appears an unusual order, October 9, 1664 by Charles City County Court as follows:

It is ordered that 85 pounds of tobacco be likewise levied for each horse or mare in this county, according to Act, to defray the
charge of killing wolves and paid as follows.
Here 8 names are shown including Richard Pace,
2 wolves, 400 pounds.

It is crystal clear that Richard's wife was named Mary
as she signed deeds with him. There appears to be ample
evidence to lead us to believe that Richard's wife was Mary
Knowles, the daughter of Reverend John Knowles, who was sent
to Virginia to preach to the people of Isle of Wight County.
He was born in England about 1628, and died in 1679, Henrico
County, Virginia.

The first record of Reverend John Knowles being in
Virginia is obtained from "The Seventeenth Century Isle
of Wight County, Virginia," by Boodie, page 57.

The Nansemond County records were destroyed by fire
about 1888, so there is no information obtainable about the
Puritans of that County.

There was apparently a scarcity of ministers in the new
settlement, for in 1642 Philip Bennett made a voyage to
Boston to secure some ministers. He carried letters to the
"Elder of Boston" in which the writers bewailed their sad
condition for the want of the salvation. The letters were
from upper Norfolk (later Nansemond) and were signed by
Richard Bennett, John Hill, Daniel Goodin, and sixty-nine
others. (Boodie)

The New England account of this voyage was that:
About the year 1642, the Lord was pleased to send
to New England for some Ministers of Christ to be
helpful unto them in instructing them in truth as
it is in Jesus. The godly Mr. Philip Bennett,
coming hither made our Reverend Elder acquainted
with this distress, who were ever zealous to take
all opportunities for enlarging the kingdom of
Christ, and upon serious consideration the Re­
erend Mr. Knowles, of Watertown, and Mr. Thomp­
son of Braintree, were sent unto them; arrived
there in safety, preached openly to the people
for some good space of time, and also from house
to house exhorted the people daily that with full
purpose of heart they come unto the Lord. The
harvest they had was plentiful for the little
space of time they were there; 'till being
opposed by the Governor, and some other malign­
ant spirits, they were forced to return to New
England."
The Ministers referred to were the Reverend William Thompson, a graduate of Oxford and the Reverend John Knowles a graduate of Immanuel College, Cambridge. However, Reverend Knowles returned to Virginia some years later and settled in Henrico County, adjoining Charles City County, and lived on an adjoining plantation to Richard Ward.

(Valentine Papers, Vol. 2, p. 619)

Henrico County records give proof of the fact the death of John Knowles in Henrico, showing the settlement of his estate. (Vol. 1677-1692, page 4).

John Knowles' wife, named Mary, was the daughter of Thomas Broadnax and Elizabeth Taylor (his second wife), and their daughter, Mary Knowles, married Richard Pace (II) and they were the parents of eight children: five sons, Richard (III), Thomas, John, George and James plus three daughters, Ann, Sarah and Elizabeth.

As stated above, the mother of these eight children was Mary, the daughter of Thomas Broadnax and wife of John Knowles. (This requires some checking on the "Broadnax Family" since very little information is available here).

The William and Mary Quarterly Magazine, Vol. 14, p. 52-58, shows that among the families of County Kent, in England, the Broadnax families held a respected position. The following pedigree is taken from Berry's Kentish:

1. Robert Broadnax, under Henry V, married Alice Scoppe, and had Robert of Hyde (Hythe) who died in 1487.

2. Robert Broadnax of Hyde married Julian and had as issue: John, Cecilius and Margaret (who married John Horne).

3. John Broadnax married Margaret and had as issue: William of Bermuda, Winifred, Joan and Martha.

4. William Broadnax married Agnes and died in 1527. Their son Robert of Chariton, married Joan Knight and had fourteen children including Thomas of Godmersham.

5. Thomas Broadnax of Godmersham married Elizabeth Taylor, daughter of John Taylor of Welsborough and had as issue:
Thomas, William, Henry, Susan
Robert (born 1615, married Elizabeth Curteis)
Elizabeth married Daniel White of Winchelsea
John married Dorothy
Mary married John Knowles
Martha married William Wootten

The last record we find of Richard Pace (II) was 1673. He paid tythes in Surry County, but did not live there. The destruction of the Charles City County records keep us from learning the date of the death of Richard Pace (II) and his wife Mary Knowles.

Of the six children of Richard Pace (II) and his wife, Mary Knowles Pace:

1. Their son, Richard (III) is next in line in our Pace family and will be given special attention under Generation IV.

2. George Pace's name appears in the Rent Roll of 1704, in Prince George County, and he made a deed to John West in 1715. (Virginia Magazine, Vol. 28, page 335).

3. James Pace married Sarah Eppes, daughter of William Eppes and his wife Sara (who was the daughter of Caesar Walpole). His father-in-law, William Eppes, made him a deed to land in 1715.

4. Thomas Pace married (1) Alecia Fleming and (2) Sarah . He was witness to a deed between Thomas Ravencroft, William Hamlin, and William Eppes in 1724.

5. John Pace married Elizabeth Newsome. She was the daughter of William Newsome. He moved to Middlesex County, Virginia. They had a daughter Sarah, baptized 1694, and a son George, baptized 1715. (Virginia Magazine, Vol. 4, page 29).

6. Elizabeth Pace first married Thomas Ravenscroft Sr. She later married John Hamlin, who bought the "Maycock" Plantation from Roger Drayton in 1696. John Hamlin was the son of Stephen Hamlin Jr., and Mary Elam. He was Captain of the Colonial Virginia Militia in 1680, and was a member of the House of
Burgesses in 1714, 1720 and 1722 from Prince George County. The Will of his wife, Elizabeth, was proved in Prince George County on May 23, 1720, and names "son William, grandson Thomas, daughters Lucy, Elizabeth and Hannah." Her son William was Clerk of Prince George County in 1714. In 1696 John Hamlin gave Maycock Plantation to his son John Hamlin, Jr.

Of the six children of Richard Pace (II) and Mary Knowles, only Richard (III) moved to North Carolina, and this action brought about, for the most part, the many Pace families now living in North Carolina, South Carolina, Georgia, Alabama and Mississippi.

GENERATION IV

RICHARD PACE (III)
(SON OF RICHARD PACE (II) AND MARY KNOWLES)

He is generally referred to as Richard Pace of North Carolina, as he was the first member of the Pace family to leave Virginia (in 1704) to settle in the Chowan Precinct, Albemarle County, North Carolina. Thirty-four years later (1738) he died in that Province in the County of Bertie, leaving his wife, Rebecca, and ten children. (His will is on record with the North Carolina Historical Commission in Raleigh). His brother, John, also migrated to North Carolina and was later followed by brothers, George and James Pace. (SEE NOTE AT END)

The Pace family of North Carolina has been historically honored, as was the Richard Pace (I) family of Jamestown.

In his book, "Pace-One of America's Earliest Emigrant Families" written by Mr. Noble Pace of Columbus, Mississippi (which is available in 1995 through the Pace Society of America) shows that:

The North Carolina colony was known as the proprietary colony because eight of the King's Lords were granted large tracts of land in North Carolina, among them being Lord Granville.

It was Richard Pace (III) who received in 1706, a land grant from Lord Granville, one of the earliest made in North
Carolina. A copy of this land grant is today hanging in the Hall of History at Raleigh, North Carolina, with a map of these lands, being on the Moratoke River, now Roanoke River. There are only three of these old grants in the Hall of History.

George Pace and James Pace also received land grants, the present Albemarle Sound, an area east of Raleigh, North Carolina records reveal a Dempsey Pace as having been granted 640 acres of land for 84 months of service in the Revolutionary War.

North Carolina records also show Burrell Pace, a Revolutionary soldier, who settled in Polk County, North Carolina, near Asheville and Hendersonville. Notable among later descendant of Burrell Pace was the late Columbus Pace who was elected to the bench at the age of 21 and served as Judge for 61 years. His grandson, Judge Charles Mills Pace, is today a Judge at Spartanburg, South Carolina.

NOTE: The Pace Society of America had its first meeting in Columbus, Mississippi, its headquarters, in 1964, presided over by Mr. Noble Pace, Historian, and Judge Mills Pace was a very interesting speaker.

Richard Pace (III) married Rebecca Poythress. Her father, Francis Poythress, was an emigrant and came to Virginia in 1636. The arms are on the tomb in Blandford Church yard, Petersburg, Virginia. He received a grant of 400 acres in Charles City in 1637. (Prince George County, Virginia, Deeds 1713-28, Part I, page 269).

Richard (III) and Rebecca had ten children. We have seen accounts which mention only seven or eight children. But there can be no question or doubt on this subject as each and every one of the ten are mentioned in their father's will; as mentioned above, it is on record with the North Carolina Historical Commission in Raleigh. It not only gives the names of the ten children, all married in 1736, but also the family name of the husband of all seven daughters. The names are as follows:

Three sons: William (I), Richard (IV) and Thomas
Seven daughters: Ann (Howard); Rebecca (Bradford); Amy (Green); Frances (Green); Tabitha (Moore); Mary (Johnson) and Sarah (House).

His will was executed March 1736, and may be found in Volume XXII, page 36, North Carolina Historical Commission.
There is a question about whether or not all the brothers in fact moved to North Carolina. While all but Thomas purchased land there, some members NOT descended from Thomas prove their line in Virginia long after this supposed migration. They could, of course, belong to another line entirely. Information on this would be most welcomed. Diane Pace, Historian, Pace Society of America, 1995.

Richard Pace (IV) who married Elizabeth Cain, had thirteen (13) children. After the Revolutionary War, the oldest son, James, and the youngest son, Darius, both left the United States for Nova Scotia. For a complete account of their life, John Raphael Pace of Lexington, North Carolina wrote an interesting book in 1991 about James and Darius which is available through the Pace Society. The book entitled, Pace: A Family History and Lineage. Now we know that the last child of Richard and Elizabeth Cain was a son, Darius, and not a daughter, as Miss Annie Jones listed on page 116.

Part of a letter written by Miss Annie Jones to Miss Maud McLure Kelly of Alabama, which offers a very good explanation about Isabella, which is very interesting:

I have been studying out the grants. The only part of it re-patented to her (if any of it was) was the 100 acres for her own personal adventure, as the other 100 acres patented to her was granted to Francis Chapman when Pace's Pains was granted to Richard Pace I, and was "made over to said Isabella at a Court at James City 21 Jan. 1621" by said Francis Chapman.

Now, since Isabella was already married to Richard Pace by 5 December 1620, according to that patent, and since married women could not buy or sell or transact business, then why did Francis Chapman make over to Isabella 100 acres of his dividend in 1621, while she was the wife of Richard Pace?

Was she Francis Chapman's daughter? Since dower was only a life-time use of 1/3 of the lands of which the husband was seized in fee during his life, that would not affect the title other
than her use. What I mean is that she would not have anything which survived her or which she could will, and at that period they usually did not sell it, just married the widow, and the record of the dower was in the Court proceedings not the deed and will recorded.

Francis Chapman was something to Isabella. I'd look up Roger Smith and Elizabeth Salter some more.

It is believed by a number of Pace descendants that Isabella, the wife of Richard Pace of "Pace's Panes" was Isabella Paine. The belief is based upon the fact that they patented a plantation jointly and named it "Pace's Paine."

Ref: William and Mary College Quarterly, Vol. 2, Page 88:

John Payne, immigrant, came in the Second Supply under the auspices of his brother, Sir Robert Payne, and settled on a grant from the Crown, in Rappahannock County. He has been traced as living in Virginia in 1620. The name is also to be found in Virginia as spelled "Paine."


**********
INDEX

ANDERSON, John 144
ANSELL, Freeman 42
ARAGON, Katherine 4
ARGALL, Gov. 35, 51
ARMS, Coat of 4, 7
AROTORS, Elizabeth 42
ASTON, Walter 31
AYCOCK, Agnes 116, 141, 165
       Celia 143
       James 143
       Rebecca 194
       Winnefred 221
       William 114
ADAMS, Miss 180

BAILEY, Lewis 33
BAKER, Ann 63
       Richard 53, 62, 63, 68,
       William 1
BARKER, John 59
       William 59
BAUGH, William 43, 59, 60, 63

BAYNEBRIDGE, Cardinal 4, 7
BECKER, William 17
BENNETT, Edward 16
       Phillip 70
BERKELEY, Capt. John 16, 23
       Sir William 35, 42, 80,
       153
BLAND, Theoderic 31
BLANY, Mrs. 27
BLEDSOE, Leona 132, 203
BOYKIN, Amelia 114, 103, 202
       Celia 114
BRADFORD, John 102, 104, 105
       114, 132, 136, 224
       Rebecca, 104, 105, 111, 132,
       195, 226, 248
       William 222, 245
BRANDON, Martin 17

BROADNAX, Elizabeth 71
       Robert 69, 245
       John 69, 145
       Thomas 69, 71, 245
       William 69
BROCKMAN, Sir John 69
       Julian 69
BREEDLOVE, Mr. 178
BROITHAUP, Christian 200
BRONSON, Elizabeth 42
BOURNE, Benja 42
BOYD, James L. 128
BROWNE, Col. Henry 35
BUCK, Rev. Richard 34
BURROWE, James 35
       John 29, 34, 35
BUGG, William A. 200
BUSSEY, Amy 202, 205
       Ann 199
       Charles 177, 178, 200
       205
       Charles Lewis 200
       Edward 180
       Elizabeth 200
       Frances Emmeline 200
       Harriett 200
       Jeremiah 200
       John Morgan 202
       Lucretia 201
       Mary, 116, 141, 200
       Nancy 200
BURKE, Sir Bernard 5

CAIN, Elizabeth 114, 115,
       118, 119, 136, 139, 144,
       150, 153, 155, 166, 195
       228, 249
       James 195
       William 197, 230
CAMDEN, William 1
CARRS, Thomas 42
CASEY, John 197
       Mary 197
       Polly 116, 165
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CHANCO</td>
<td>10, 21, 34, 36, 37, 241</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CHAPMAN, Francis</td>
<td>24, 32, 33, 38</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLARKE, George</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLAYBOURNE, William</td>
<td>51</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>COLLEGE</td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>COOPWOOD, Pearl</td>
<td>128</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>COPLAND, Patrick</td>
<td>218</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>COWART, Carrie</td>
<td>215</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>COX, Mr. 166</td>
<td>166</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CRISPEN, William</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CROTHER, Hugh</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CULPEPPER, Dick</td>
<td>127</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CURSTAFNEY, Mr.</td>
<td>182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DALE, Robert W.</td>
<td>128</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DARLIN, John</td>
<td>184</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DAY, Sarah</td>
<td>123, 198, 200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DeDREPORE 1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DEESHAM, Robert</td>
<td>42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DeLAUGHTER, George</td>
<td>144, 146</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DEVEREAUX, John</td>
<td>106</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DILL, Jacob</td>
<td>200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mr. 179</td>
<td>179</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DODWELL, Hezekiah</td>
<td>181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DOLPHENBY, Richard</td>
<td>29, 33, 35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DOWNING, Susanna</td>
<td>200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DRAYTON, John</td>
<td>52, 58, 65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Roger, 50, 53, 73, 74</td>
<td>76, 77, 80, 152</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DREW, Thomas</td>
<td>43, 59, 60, 66, 68, 240</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EPPS, Capt. 70</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lt. Col. Francis</td>
<td>78</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lt. Col. John II</td>
<td>79</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Littlebury</td>
<td>73, 78, 79, 112</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sarah</td>
<td>72, 76, 77, 80, 86, 89, 100</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William 72, 76, 77, 78</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EVANS, Benjamin</td>
<td>86, 88</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary 80</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Faith 88</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EVANS, Hannah</td>
<td>88</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henry 88</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary 80</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rebecca 88</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FARRAR, William</td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FISHER, Martin</td>
<td>3, 75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sarah 79, 155</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FLEMING, Alex</td>
<td>74, 75, 80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizabeth 74</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Joyce 74</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ursia 74</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FORD, Berta</td>
<td>215</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FORT, Arthur</td>
<td>116, 138, 166, 197, 228</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizabeth 197</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Judge Moses 166</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Norma 197</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Owen 166, 197</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dr. Tomlinson 166</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FOWLER, Levinia</td>
<td>98</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GARDNER, Lucretia</td>
<td>181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GATES, Elizabeth</td>
<td>27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gates &amp; Somers 8, 31</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sir Thomas 25, 26, 27, 32, 36, 38, 217</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GEBY, Prudence</td>
<td>43</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GETZEN, Brother</td>
<td>183</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>George 183</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Samuel Pace 201</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GIB, Lieut. 16</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GIGGERS, Melvina</td>
<td>149</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GLOVER, Daniel Mitchell</td>
<td>200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miss 181</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Penelope 178</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GODMERSHAM, Thomas</td>
<td>69</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRANVILLE, John Earl</td>
<td>92, 93, 94, 105</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lord John 92, 107</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GREEN, Amy</td>
<td>111, 112, 114 195</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ann 111, 113</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Burwell 112, 113</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Frances 111, 112</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRYER, William</td>
<td>42</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
HAMLIN, Elizabeth 75, 76, 90
John 50, 54, 72, 74, 76, 77, 80, 90, 247
Stephen 75, 77
William 78
HAMMOND, Col. Leroy 164, 196
Mary Ann 138
HAYNES, John J. 201
William D. 201
HENDERSON, Elder 211, 213
HENRY, King VIII 3, 4, 7
HEYWARD, John 42
HIGHTOWER, Harriett 179, 200
HILL, Virginia 203, 213
HINSDALE, J. W. 106
HINTON, Col. John 105
Mary 105
HITT, Martin 179, 200
HOLDER, James Allen 128
HOLLAND, E. M. 200
Lucretia 201
HOLLOWAY, George 43
HOUSE, Sarah 111, 114, 195
HOWARD, Ann 248
HURST, John Newton 181
HYTHE, Robert II 69

JACKSON, John 26
Aunt Louise Pace 214
Patrick 63
Roscoe 215
JOHNSON, Mary 10, 111, 195
William 114
JONES, Miss Annie 147, 161
222, 249
Phereby 184
JUSTON, Thomas 42

KELLY, Amie Elizabeth Pace 230
Ben 201
Benjamin Gerald 203, 213
Frances Marion 234
George Summerville 234
James Robertson 234, 235
Maud McIure 160, 193, 205, 217, 234, 237, 238, 249

KELLY, Richard Bussey 203, 213, 233, 235
Robert S. 203
Samuel Camp 203, 213, 233, 236
Samuel Bledsoe 235
William Milner 235
Dr. William Pace 213

KIMBROUGH, Grizzelle 105
KNIGHT, Joan 69
KNOWLES, John 70, 71, 80, 244, 245
Mary, 57, 60, 68, 70, 71, 72, 80, 101, 131, 245, 246, 247

LAFSWORTH, Michael 23, 47
LANE, Henry 105
Joel 105
Winnefred 221, 223

LAWMOR, John 42
LEE, Ludbrook, 146, 198

LEONARD, Emma 128
Kate 128
Tom 128

LEVERETT, Matitia 201
Miss 179

LIGHTFOOT, John 42

LITTLEBERRY, Elizabeth 78

LOWE, Charles 153
Elizabeth 80, 90
Mary 76
Micajah 76
Susan 76
Thomas 42

MCDONALD, William 233

MACAR, Master Owen 16

MACKORY, J. 42

MACOCK, Roger 66

MADDEN, Thomas 60, 61, 68

MADDOW, Thomas 53

MAGRUDER, N. T. 200

MASON, Ann 33

MATTHEWS, Capt. Samuel 25, 26, 51

MARKER, Roger 33

MARKO, Sara 43

MARVIN, Aaron 200
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>MATTHEWS, Capt. Samuel</td>
<td>219</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MAYCOCK, Roger</td>
<td>66</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Capt. Samuel</td>
<td>3, 17, 23, 36, 44, 45, 46, 47, 48, 50, 51, 52, 54, 66, 82, 217, 238, 239, 242</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MAXWELL, Alex</td>
<td>42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MELTON, Mary</td>
<td>90</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MENEFFEE, Capt. Geo.</td>
<td>30, 38, 66, 67, 82</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary</td>
<td>31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MILER, Lena</td>
<td>128</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MONTGOMERY, Elder James</td>
<td>182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Neal</td>
<td>42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Samuel Purrhus</td>
<td>203</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MOORE, Jane</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John</td>
<td>3, 114</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tabitha</td>
<td>195, 248</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MORDECAI, Moses</td>
<td>106</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MORGAN, Abiah</td>
<td>180, 200, 201</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Drury</td>
<td>202</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Enos</td>
<td>182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nancy</td>
<td>202</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MORRISON, Ann</td>
<td>189</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NAUTAUQUAS</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NEWSOME, Elizabeth</td>
<td>72, 79, 80, 147, 246</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John</td>
<td>121</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary</td>
<td>116, 142, 155, 163</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peter</td>
<td>145, 155</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Robert</td>
<td>79</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Solomon</td>
<td>142, 145, 155, 229</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas</td>
<td>79</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>William</td>
<td>79, 155, 246</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NICHOLSON, Alexander</td>
<td>42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NUSE, Thomas</td>
<td>49</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NOVELL, Walton</td>
<td>42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>O’DANIEL, Mr.</td>
<td>166</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OPECHANKANO</td>
<td>9, 18, 19, 21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OSBERNE, William Fitz</td>
<td>1, 2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OWENS, Richard</td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PACE, PACY, PASE, PAICE</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PACE, Alberta</td>
<td>215</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alexia</td>
<td>74</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alfred G.</td>
<td>114, 125, 127, 131, 147, 148, 153, 155</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Amie Elizabeth</td>
<td>233, 236</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ann</td>
<td>72, 89, 90, 114, 195</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Angie L.</td>
<td>215</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Annie Lula</td>
<td>215</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Augustus</td>
<td>184</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barnabas</td>
<td>115, 116, 120, 139, 140, 144, 145, 156, 165, 193, 196, 216, 223, 227, 230</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bazil</td>
<td>165</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carrie</td>
<td>128, 148</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Charity</td>
<td>146, 198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Charlotte</td>
<td>116, 144, 198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Charles Franklin (twin)</td>
<td>128, 148</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Darius</td>
<td>116, 249</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>David</td>
<td>96, 123, 196</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edgar L.</td>
<td>215</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edwin Layfette (twin)</td>
<td>128, 148</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizabeth</td>
<td>72, 75, 79, 80, 83, 89, 144, 147, 178, 195, 244</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Emily</td>
<td>182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eunice</td>
<td>195</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eugenia Elesif</td>
<td>128, 148</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fanny</td>
<td>183</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Francis</td>
<td>114, 181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Freeman H.</td>
<td>181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>George</td>
<td>28, 29, 30, 33, 254</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Hannah 75
Hardy 195, 225
Harriett 128, 148
Harvey Beckwith 215
Homer 7, 90
Isabella 8, 9, 24, 28, 41, 55, 83, 129, 194, 217
James 65, 72, 76, 80, 83, 84, 86, 87, 89, 91, 92, 94, 95, 96, 97, 98, 99, 100, 108, 115, 120, 123, 124, 129, 137, 141, 147, 153, 163, 195, 214, 225, 246, 248
James Herman 128, 148
Jane 74
Jean 74
Jeremiah 178, 179
John 3, 7, 65, 79, 82, 85, 92, 97, 122, 163, 165, 178, 195
John Noel 165
John W. 214
Kate Louise 215
Knowles (Noel) 116, 137, 138, 139, 198, 228
Leroy 165, 198
Louisa 189
Lucinda 189
Lucretia 87, 181, 189, 293
Lucretia Jane 87, 181
Lucy 75, 76, 214
Malachia 177
Margaret 2
Mary 75, 87, 88, 114, 121, 122, 123, 144, 178, 184, 189, 195, 196, 214, 244
Mary Nanie 215
Mazy 165
Melvina Eudora Gigger 127, 128, 129, 148
Nathan 200

PACE, Nathaniel 198
Nancy 180
Noble B. 127, 247
Obedience 80, 87
Oscar 215
Parris 165
Patsy 163, 181, 197
Paschal 233
Patience 195
Permelia 182
Philip 214
Rachel 195
Rebecca 73, 101, 111, 112, 114, 119, 182, 222
Rhoda 182
Russell 215
Samuel 163, 196
Sarah 72, 114, 123, 138, 195, 200
Sally 116
Silas 116, 119, 120, 121, 122, 123, 129, 137, 138, 139, 140, 141, 142, 145, 147, 153, 155, 162, 196, 198, 228
Solomon 117, 115
Stephen 198
Tabitha 3, 114
PACE, Thomas 2, 3, 65, 71, 72, 74, 75, 80, 83, 111, 112, 114, 115, 116, 137, 138, 139, 163, 164, 165, 177, 181, 194, 198, 226, 228, 246
Viney, 97, 98
Virgil Homer 213, 233
PAINE, Isabella 56, 250
PARKER, Agatha 181
PARTRIDGE, William 42
PASCHAL, Amy 189
Mr. 189
Nancy 189
Virgil 189
PERCE, Master 17
PERCY, Capt. Ralph 10
PERRY, Capt. William 8, 9, 21, 23, 25, 27, 28, 30, 31, 32, 34, 35, 36, 38, 40, 41, 56, 66, 194
Henry 30, 31, 56
Isabella 27, 28, 29, 30, 31, 33, 38, 40, 55
Macajah 76
Lt. William 30, 34
PERSE, Master Thomas 17
PHILLIP, King of France 1
PIERCE, Joan (Jane) 52, 54
Capt. William 218
William 47, 52
PITT, Hannah 59
POCAHONTAS 8, 18
PORY, Master 10
Master John 45, 49, 239
POTT, Docto 27
POWATAN 9, 13, 18
POWELL, Capt. Nathaniel 10, 17, 23, 25, 26, 45, 46, 48, 49
Capt. William 25, 26, 27
POYTHRESS, Rebecca 73, 101, 102, 112, 114, 136, 150, 153, 248
Thomas 73, 152
PRICE, Mr. 182
Robert 197
Wilea 182
William H. 201
PULLE, Bennett 33
RAMSEY, Mary 79, 155
RAVENSCROFT, Thomas 50, 72, 75, 76, 246
RAWLINS, Richard 42
RAY, Sarah 196
READ, Peter A. 65
REAGAN, Minnie 215
RHODES, James 146
RICHARDS, Richard 25, 29, 30, 33, 35, 38
RIDDING, Thomas 42
RIGSBY, Elizabeth 128
ROBINS, Christopher 154
Elizabeth 153
John 153
Thomas 154
William 154
ROBINSON, Miss 181
ROGERS, Thomas 2
ROLFE, Elizabeth 51
John 23, 45, 46, 49, 54, 72, 218
SALTER, Elizabeth 218
SCARSHROOK, Henry 181
SCOTT, Thomas 42
SHACKLEFORD, Miss Elizabeth 120, 141, 151, 154, 163
James 153
SHEFFIELD, Thomas 16
SKINNER, John 33
SMITH, Captain 16
John 29, 35
Capt. Roger 47, 51, 52, 54, 218, 219
SMYTH, John 30, 34, 38
SOMERS, Sir William 217
SPIELMAN, Capt. Henry 17
SPRUCE, Ensín 17
STEWART, Ann 111, 195, 226
STOCKS, William 181
STROUD, Thomas 43
SWANN, Thomas 34, 56, 66
SWINHOW, Master 17

TAYLOR, Ed 57
   Elizabeth 71
   Erasmus 3
   John 64, 69
   Richard 3, 54, 58, 59, 60, 61
TERRELL, Eleanor 216
THOMPSON Dayll 42
   Jean 42
THORPE, Master George 16, 23, 49
THORNTON, Francis 74
   Tony 128
TINSLEY, Brother 174, 175
TOMLINSON, Susanna 197
TOMPKINS, Mrs. 181

WACKESLY, Daniel 42
WARD, James 57, 58
WALKER, Andrew 43
WALPOLE, William 202
WALPOLE, Caesar 72, 76, 77, 79
   Richard 76, 77
   Sarah 76, 77
WARRREN, John 42
WATERS, Master 16
WEAVER, Mr. 189, 201
   Simeon H. 202
WELLS, Thomas 42
WEST, Capt. Francis 29, 35, 45, 46, 51, 219
   Master John 16
   Capt. Nathaniel 16, 28
WHITE, Daniel 71
   Hugh H. 197
   Nathaniel Hunt 197
   William Thomas 197
WHITEHEAD, Richard 197
WICKHAM, Master William 45
   Rev. William 46

WILBURNE, Burket 197
WILKINS, Daniel 28
   William 53, 57, 58, 60
WILMHYM, Joan 69
WILSONN, Elizabeth 80, 155
WOODRUFF, Annie 197
WRIGHT, Jane 28
   Robert 28
WYATT, Sir Francis, Gov. 27, 51, 219

YEARLEY, Sir George 17, 28, 45, 49, 51, 238

CORRECTIONS

Page 181, last para., The son married a Miss Leverett and lives in ALABAMA, not Atlanta.